

A  
SERBIAN GRAMMAR

OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS

LONDON    EDINBURGH    GLASGOW    NEW YORK

TORONTO    MELBOURNE    CAPE TOWN    BOMBAY

HUMPHREY MILFORD

PUBLISHER TO THE UNIVERSITY



# SERBIAN GRAMMAR

BY

DRAGUTIN SUBOTIĆ

PH.D., MUNICH

AND

NEVILL FORBES, M.A.

READER IN RUSSIAN AND THE OTHER SLAVONIC LANGUAGES  
IN THE UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD

OXFORD

AT THE CLARENDON PRESS

1918



✓

## PREFACE

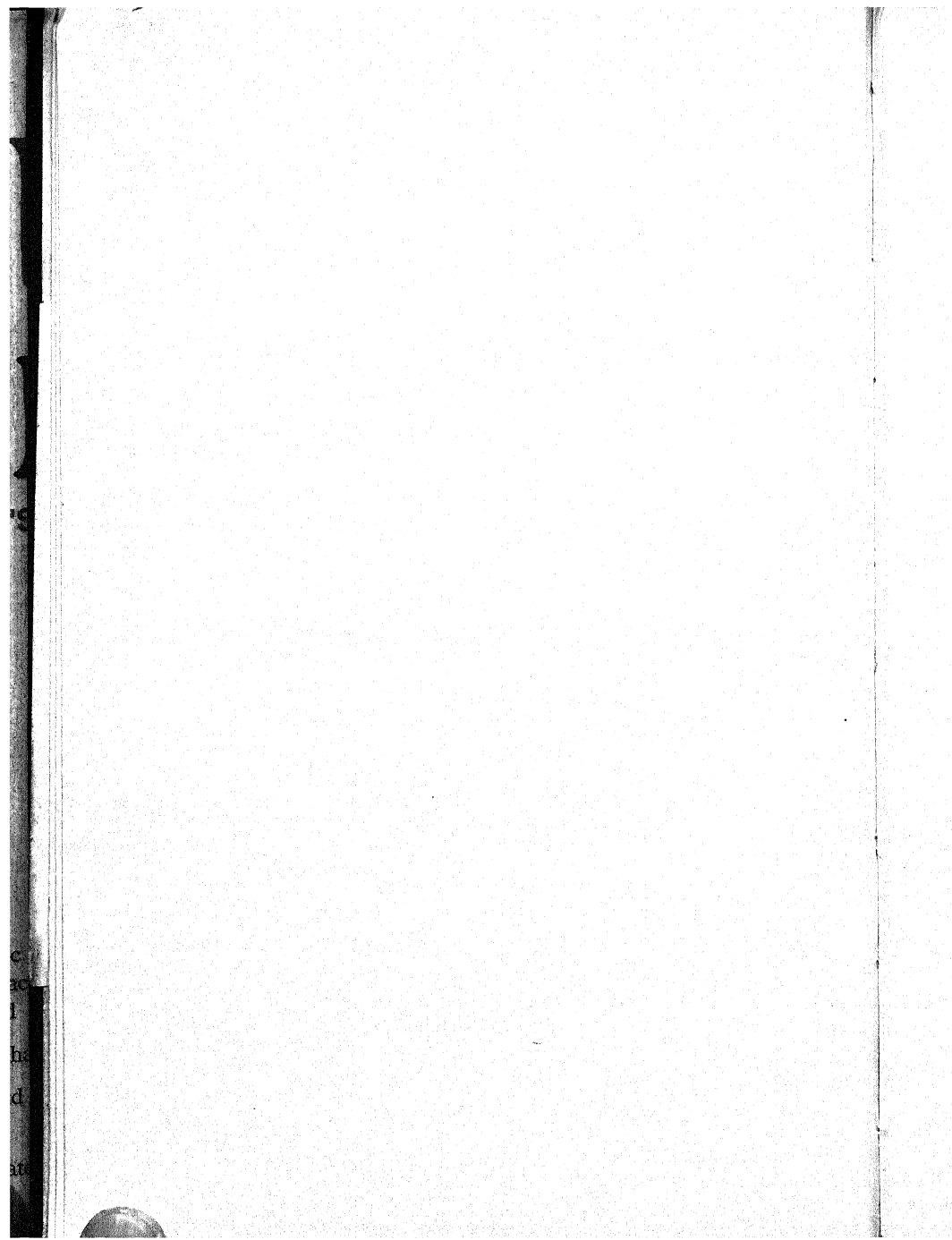
THE title of this book has been chosen for the sake of simplicity. The full name of the language is Serbo-Croatian. It must be emphasized that Croatian, except for slight differences of dialect and vocabulary, is absolutely the same language as Serbian, only written with the Latin alphabet with diacritic signs. Knowledge of both the Cyrillic and Latin (Croatian) alphabets is indispensable to any student of Serbo-Croatian, therefore it is recommended to practise as much as possible the transcription of words written in Cyrillic into Latin, and vice versa.

In the *English* exercises, the sentences have sometimes been framed according to the rules of *Serbian* syntax, in order to accustom the student to its peculiarities.

We wish to thank Mr. Šuvaković for the time and labour he has given us by helping with the accentuation.

D. S.

N. F.



# CONTENTS

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION . . . . .	9
1. The Serbian Language . . . . .	9
2. The Alphabet . . . . .	10
3. The Pronunciation . . . . .	14
4. The different kinds of Sounds . . . . .	15
5. The Accent . . . . .	20
6. The Dialects . . . . .	22

## PART I

CHAPTER	
1. Easy Pronouns and Nouns . . . . .	25
2. The Present Tense of <i>to be</i> . . . . .	31
3. Substantives and the use of the Cases without Prepositions . . . . .	36
4. Declension of Substantives . . . . .	44
5. Reading Exercise . . . . .	51
6. Personal and Demonstrative Pronouns, and the use of the Present Tense of <i>to be</i> . . . . .	54
7. The Past Tense of <i>to be</i> . . . . .	59
8. Adjectives (and Adjectival Adverbs) . . . . .	61
9. Declension of Adjectives . . . . .	64
10. The use of the Possessive Pronouns, and of the Adjectives with the Past Tense of <i>to be</i> . . . . .	66
11. The Future Tense of <i>to be</i> . . . . .	73
12. Interrogative and Relative Pronouns, and the use of the Present, Past, and Future of <i>to be</i> . . . . .	76
13. The Imperative and the Conditional (and the Aorist) of <i>to be</i> . . . . .	81
14. The Comparative and Superlative of Adjectives . . . . .	84
15. The use of the Comparative and Superlative, and of the Conditional and Imperative of <i>to be</i> . . . . .	88
16. The Imperfect and Pluperfect of <i>to be</i> . . . . .	91
17. The Numerals . . . . .	92
18. The use of the Numerals . . . . .	99

# CONTENTS

## PART II

CHAPTER	PAGE
19. The Verbs: the Formation of the Infinitive and the Present . . . . .	101
20. Reflexive and Impersonal Verbs . . . . .	114
21. The Aspects of the Verb: their Meaning and Formation . . . . .	121
22. Pronouns declined like Adjectives, and the use of the Present Tense of <i>to have</i> . . . . .	135
23. List of useful Verbs . . . . .	139
24. The Past Tense (Perfect or Compound Past) . . . . .	148
25. The Prepositions, and the use of the Present Tense of Verbs . . . . .	151
26. Definitive Pronouns, and the use of the Present and Past Tenses of the Verbs mentioned in Chapter 23 . . . . .	165
27. The Future Tense of <i>to have</i> , and of other Verbs . . . . .	169
28. Indefinite Pronouns and Adverbs . . . . .	170
29. The use of the Present, Past, and Future Tenses of <i>to have</i> , and of other Verbs . . . . .	172
30. The Imperative and Conditional of all Verbs . . . . .	177
31. Adverbs, and the use of the Imperative and Conditional . . . . .	179
32. The Aorist, Imperfect, and Pluperfect . . . . .	187
33. Conjunctions and Interjections . . . . .	189
34. The Participles . . . . .	194
35. The Order of Words and the Formation of Subordinate Sentences . . . . .	200
36. Reading Exercise . . . . .	215
37. Reading Exercise . . . . .	218
38. Reading Exercise . . . . .	220

# INTRODUCTION

## 1. THE SERBIAN LANGUAGE

THE Serbian language is one of the Slavonic languages,<sup>1</sup> and therefore also one of the family of Indo-European languages. It is spoken by more than ten millions of Serbs and Croats living in the following countries and territories : the kingdoms of Serbia and Montenegro, Bosnia and Hercegovina, Dalmatia and the islands, Croatia and Slavonia, in parts of Istria and in the former 'Serbian Duchy' (*Srpska Vojvodina*) in Southern Hungary, which includes the districts of purely Serbian nationality, known as *Baranja*, *Banat*, and *Bačka*. There are also large colonies of Serbs and Croats in the United States and in South America.

The language of both Serbs and Croats is, with the exception of inevitable differences of dialect and vocabulary, one and the same ; thus it is customary to speak of it as the *Serbo-Croatian language*. Very closely allied to the Serbo-Croatian language, of which it may be considered almost a dialect, is the language of the one and a half million Slovenes who inhabit the southern parts of the provinces of Styria and Carinthia, the province of Carniola, and the districts of Trieste and Gorica (Gorizia) in Austria. The Serbs, Croats, and Slovenes are all included in the term *Southern Slavs* or *Jugo-Slavs* (*jug*, pronounce *yug* = *south* in Serbian).

The Serbs, being members of the Eastern or Orthodox Church, use the alphabet known as the Cyrillic, the Croats and Slovenes, being Roman Catholics, use the Latin alphabet. The Cyrillic alphabet is also used in Russia and Bulgaria, i.e. by all orthodox

<sup>1</sup> The Slavonic languages fall into three groups, the Eastern (Russian, i.e. Great Russian and Little Russian), the Southern (Bulgarian, Serbo-Croatian, and Slovene), and the Western (Bohemian or Chekh or Czech, Slovak, Polish, and Lusatian-Wendish or Sorbish).

Slavs. The Latin alphabet, as used by the Croats and Slovenes, is the same as that used in England except for the fact that a few consonants have been furnished with diacritic signs to represent certain complex sounds.

The Cyrillic alphabet is so called after St. Cyril, who, with his brother Methodius, converted the Slavs in Moravia in the ninth century, and are known as the 'Slavonic apostles'. The Slavs of the Balkans were actually converted by their disciples. These two missionaries were Greeks of Salonica, but they knew the language of the Balkan Slavs, who at that time were already settled up to within a few miles of Salonica, and St. Cyril is credited with the invention of this alphabet to help the success of his mission, and to enable the Holy Scriptures to be written in the various Slavonic languages. This alphabet is founded on the Greek, but contains a number of letters representing sounds which did not exist in Greek. Some of these letters are supposed to have been borrowed from Semitic sources, others were freshly elaborated.

The foreigner should learn the Cyrillic alphabet, but he must also sooner or later make himself familiar with the language as expressed by the Latin alphabet. A knowledge of both alphabets is essential both from the literary and from the practical points of view.

It may be pointed out that the Cyrillic alphabet as used in Serbia and Montenegro, &c., is purely phonetic in that each single sign by itself represents one and only one sound in the language, which can hardly be said of any other European alphabet. Conversely, there are no sounds in the language other than those expressed by its alphabet. The same holds good of Croatian, except that one or two double letters are still used.

## 2. THE ALPHABET

The Cyrillic alphabet as used in Serbia consists of thirty letters. It originally contained more, but was reformed and simplified in the first half of the nineteenth century by the great Serbian philologist and author Vuk Stefanović Karadžić (1787-1864), who, by this means, brought it into complete accord with



the phonetics of the modern spoken language. Being originally founded on the Greek, the order of the letters is mainly that of the Greek alphabet. The Croatian alphabet naturally follows the order of the Latin, but in the accompanying scheme (pages 12 and 13) this order has been altered in order to show the correspondence between it and the Serbian Cyrillic.

The following is the Croatian alphabet in the order of the Latin letters, with the Cyrillic equivalents :

a A	a A	l L	л Л
b B	б Б	lj Lj	љ Љ
c C	ц Ц	m M	м М
č Č	ч Ч	n N	н Н
ć Ć	ћ Ћ	nj Nj	њ Њ
d D	д Д	o O	о О
dž Ć Dž	џ Џ	p P	п П
đ gj <sup>1</sup> Đ Gj	ђ Ђ	r R	р Р
e E	е Е	s S	с С
f F	ф Ф	š Š	ш Ш
g G	г Г	t T	т Т
h H	х Х	u U	у У
i I	и И	v V	в В
j J	ј Ј	z Z	з З
k K	к К	ž Ž	ж Ж

It will be seen that in several cases the Croatian Latin alphabet employs double letters or letters with diacritic signs over them where the Serbian Cyrillic constantly employs only one letter. It even has alternative signs to represent certain sounds, the reason being that uniformity of spelling in Croatia has not yet been achieved, while in Serbia it has, e.g. Serbian ģ can be represented in Croatian by gj or đ or dj, of which the first two are the most usual. Of the other alternative signs, lj is commoner than l, nj than n, dž than ģ.

The following is the Serbian alphabet in the order of the Cyrillic letters, with the Latin (Croatian) equivalents, and the cursive script in both alphabets :

<sup>1</sup> Also, less commonly, dj, Dj.

CYRILLIC			LATIN		
Ord. No.	Printed	Written	Printed	Written	Pronunciation
1	а А	а А	а А	а А	English <i>a</i> in <i>father</i> .
2	б Б	б Б	б Б	б Б	English <i>b</i>
3	в В	в В	в В	в В	English <i>v</i>
4	г Г	г Г	г Г	г Г	English <i>g</i> in <i>go</i>
5	д Д	д Д	д Д	д Д	English <i>d</i>
6	ђ Ђ	ђ Ђ	đ (dj), Đ gj Dj	đ Đ Dj	{ A sound between the English <i>d</i> in <i>dune</i> and <i>j</i> in <i>John</i>
7	е Е	е Е	е Е	е Е	
8	ж Ж	ж Ж	ž Ž	ž Ž	{ English <i>s</i> in <i>pleasure</i> French <i>j</i> in <i>jour</i>
9	з З	з З	z Z	z Z	English <i>z</i>
10	и И	и И	и И	и И	English <i>i</i> in <i>machine</i>
11	ј Ј	ј Ј	ј Ј	ј Ј	English <i>y</i> in <i>yet</i>
12	к К	к К	к К	к К	English <i>k</i>
13	л Л	л Л	л Л	л Л	English <i>l</i>
14	љ Љ	љ Љ	lj Lj	љ Lj	{ English <i>l</i> in <i>million</i> Italian <i>gl</i> in <i>egli</i>
15	м М	м М	м М	м М	English <i>m</i>
16	н Н	н Н	н Н	н Н	English <i>n</i>
17	њ Њ	њ Њ	њ Nj	њ Nj	{ English <i>n</i> in <i>new</i> French <i>gn</i> in <i>Boulogne</i>

## CYRILLIC

## LATIN

Ord. No.	Printed	Written	Printed	Written	Pronunciation
18	О О	o O	o O	o O	English o in <i>Olivia</i>
19	П П	p P	p P	p P	English p
20	Р Р	r R	r R	r R	Scottish r in <i>merry</i>
21	С С	s S	s S	s S	English ss in <i>glass</i>
22	Т Т	t T	t T	t T	English t
23	ѣ ѣ	e E	é É	é E	{ A sound between the English t in <i>tune</i> and ch in <i>chalk</i>
24	у у	u U	u U	u U	
25	ѣ ѣ	f F	f F	f F	English f
26	х х	x X	h H	h H	{ Scottish ch in <i>loch</i> , English h (cf. p. 15)
27	ц ц	c C	c C	c C	English ts in <i>lots</i>
28	ч ч	č Č	č Č	č Č	English ch in <i>chalk</i>
29	ѣ ѣ	dž, g, Dž	dž, g, Dž	dž, g, Dž	English j in <i>John</i>
30	ш ш	š Š	š Š	š Š	English sh in <i>she</i>

## NOTE ON FOREIGN WORDS

Foreign proper names when transliterated in Cyrillic are spelt 'phonetically', e.g.

*Shakespeare* = Шекспир; *Glasgow* = Глазгоу or Глазгѡв; *William* = Вильем; *John* = Їѡн.

Foreign words as a rule have to conform to the Serbo-Croatian rules of phonetics and orthography, e.g.

*professor* = профессор; *engineer* = инжѣњер

## 3. THE PRONUNCIATION

The pronunciation of Serbo-Croatian is infinitely easier for English-speaking people than is that of any of the other Slavonic languages. The rule in Serbo-Croatian is 'to write as you speak and to speak as you write' (Vuk, cf. p. 10). The pronunciation of each individual letter is in all cases the same, therefore the only difficulty is to learn the value of each letter.

The vowels и, е, а, о, у are all pronounced 'openly' as in Italian, cf. p. 12 f.

The great majority of the consonants also present no difficulty whatever. The only consonants which call for special remark are the following: ш and ж, ч and џ, ѣ and ѧ.

ш is a *voiceless*<sup>1</sup> consonant exactly like English *sh*; ж is the corresponding *voiced*<sup>1</sup> consonant pronounced like *s* in the English word *pleasure*, or like *j* in the French word *jour*.

ч is a *voiceless* consonant exactly like English *ch* in *chalk*; џ is the corresponding *voiced* consonant pronounced like *j* in the English word *John*.

The only difficulty is with the two consonants ѣ and ѧ, though it is by no means insurmountable. To pronounce these two consonants the teeth must be brought close together and the lips slightly opened. The blade<sup>2</sup> of the tongue must cleave to the inside of the gums of the upper teeth and be slightly drawn

<sup>1</sup> The difference between a *voiceless* and a *voiced* consonant is that a *voiceless* consonant is pronounced with breath from the mouth *only*, while to pronounce a *voiced* consonant a stream of breath from the chest is necessary.

<sup>2</sup> The blade is the part of the tongue immediately behind the point and including it.

back at the moment when the stream of breath comes out of the chest through the mouth. The important point is that *h* is a *voiceless* and *ħ* the corresponding *voiced* consonant. Thus *h* and *ħ* correspond to *ч* and *ѡ* and are very similar to them in sound, only they are palatal consonants,<sup>1</sup> which *ч* and *ѡ* are not.

The consonant *x* before a consonant, as in *хвала*=*thanks*, is pronounced like *ch* in Scottish *loch*, but before a vowel like an ordinary English *h*, as in *хартѡја*=*paper*.

It is important also to notice the difference between *л* and *љ*, and between *н* and *њ*; *љ* and *њ* are the *softened* or *palatal* forms of *л* and *н*, just as *h* and *ħ* are the *softened* or *palatal* forms of *т* and *д*. Their pronunciation is perfectly easy and natural for English-speaking people except at the end of words, a position in which for that matter these letters in Serbo-Croatian seldom occur; in the middle of words they sound like *l* and *n* in the English words *million* and *new*.

#### 4. THE DIFFERENT KINDS OF SOUNDS

##### 1. Vowels

Besides the five normal vowels—*a*, *e*, *и*, *o*, *y*—*p* can also rank as a vowel when it is (1) between two consonants, or (2) at the beginning of a word before a consonant; in these cases it is strongly rolled as in Scotland, e.g.

1. Србин=*a Serb (masc.)*; трговац=*merchant*; чврст=*firm*.<sup>2</sup>

2. рђа=*rust*; рвати се=*to wrestle*; рђав=*bad*.

*p* very seldom occurs as a vowel-sound before or after a vowel; when it does it is indicated by two dots, e.g.

<sup>1</sup> *h* and *ħ*, besides being the result respectively of *т+j* and *д+j* (cf. p. 18), are also the result, in words of comparatively modern formation, of *к+j* and *к+е*, *г+j* and *г+е*, e.g. *ћошак*=*corner* (from Turkish *kiushk*, cf. *kiosque*, *a pavilion*), *Маћедонија*=*Macedonia* (*к+е*), *Мађар* (also *Маѡар*)=*Magyar*, *Ђорђе*=*George*, *ђенерал*=*general*, though there is now no *к* or *г* audible in these words.

<sup>2</sup> Even in words of foreign origin, e.g. *трпезарија*=*dining-room*, from the Greek *τραπεζαριον*.

грѣце (3 syllables) = *throat* (diminutive).

заѣхати (4 syllables) = *to become rusty*.

All vowels, including *p*, may be either short or long.

### ‘Movable A’

Particular mention must be made of what is known as the ‘movable a’. In Serbian only the following four groups of consonants are possible at the end of words : *ст, шт, зд, жд* ; when a word would end in any other group than these, an *a* is inserted in the *nom. sing.*, but disappears in the other cases where the word naturally ends in a vowel ; but in the *gen. plur.* the *a* reappears in these words, a phenomenon caused by the fact that the invariable long *final a* of this case is of comparatively modern origin. E.g.

*Nom. sing.* ко̀нац = *cotton, thread*.

*Gen. sing.* ко̀нца.

*Gen. plur.* ко̀наца̃.

It is very frequent in the *nom. sing. masc.* of adjectives, e.g. же́дан (*masc.*) = *thirsty*, but же́дна (*fem.*).

In the case of foreign words practice varies ; thus one finds both факт and факат.

### Final л and о

Final *л* of a syllable, and especially of a word, very frequently becomes *о*. In words which originally ended in *-ол* in the *nom. sing.* the two *о*’s then combine into one long vowel, but the *л* reappears in the other cases, e.g.

во̀ (*m.*) = *ox*, *gen. sing.* во̀ла.

сто̀ (*m.*) = *table*, *gen. sing.* сто̀ла.

со̀ = *salt*, *gen. sing.* со̀ли, the *nom. sing.* of which was originally вол, стол, and сол.

In other cases the *л* appears as *о* after another vowel when final, reappearing in other cases, e.g.

бѐо = *white* (*nom. sing. masc.*), but бѐла = *white* (*nom. sing. fem.*), бѐли = *white* (*nom. plur. masc.*). This phenomenon occurs most frequently in the past participle of the verbs, e.g.

има̀о = (*he*) *had* (*masc. sing.*), but има̀ла = (*she*) *had* (*fem. sing.*).

It may also occur in the middle of words when *л* is at the end of a syllable, e.g.

сеѡба = *migration* (originally селба).

владаоца, gen. sing. of владалац = *ruler* (e.g. *king*).

Cf. also Беѡград = *Belgrade* (lit. *the white city*, originally Бел-град).

## 2. Consonants

The consonants, according to the manner of their articulation, fall into the two groups :

1. Voiced : б, в, г, д, ѣ, ж, з, џ.

2. Voiceless : п, ф, к, т, х, ш, с, ч, ц, х.

### *Rule of the assimilation of Consonants*

When a voiced and a voiceless consonant come together, assimilation takes place, i.e. both must be either voiced or voiceless : (1) a voiceless consonant becomes voiced before a voiced consonant, and (2) vice versa, e.g.

(1) свѡдба (*f.*) = *wedding* is derived from сват + ба (свѡт (*m.*) = *wedding guest*)

ѡтацбина (*f.*) = *fatherland* ,, ,, отач + бина (ѡтац (*m.*) = *father*)

(2) српски (*adj.*) = *Serbian* ,, ,, срб + ски (србин (*m.*) = *Serbian* (*m.*))

врапци (*nom. pl.*) = *sparrows* ,, враб + ци (врабац (*m.*) = *sparrow*)

Exceptions : д remains before с and ш, e.g.

председник (*m.*) = *president*.

ѡдшкринути = *to open slightly*.

в never changes into ф and does not change preceding voiceless consonants, e.g.

кѡлѡвка (*f.*) (not колефка) = *cradle*.

клѡтва (*f.*) (not кледва) = *curse*.

## MOST IMPORTANT PHONETIC RULES

I. The gutturals к, г, х are 'softened' when followed (1) by е and (2) by и, as follows :

1. (a) Before *e*, *к* changes into *ч*, *г* into *ж*, *х* into *ш*, in voc. sing. of masculine nouns, e.g.

Nom. sing., *вѣк (m.)*, *wolf*, voc. sing. *вѣче*.

„ „ *бѣг (m.)*, *god*, „ „ *бѣже*.

„ „ *дѣх (m.)*, *spirit*, „ „ *дѣше*.

(b) In the 2nd and 3rd person singular of the aorist tense (cf. p. 187 f.), e.g. *рѣки* = *to tell*, *тѣгнути* = *to pull*.

1st p. *рѣкох*, *I told*, 2nd and 3rd p. *рѣче*.

„ *тѣрох*, *I pulled*, „ „ *тѣже*.

(c) In certain words derived from those ending in these consonants, e.g.

*друг (m.)*, *companion*; *дружити се*, *to keep company*.

*конач (m.)*, *a hostel*; *коначити*, *to spend the night*.

*сух (adj.)*, *dry*; *сушити*, *to dry* (transitive).

2. Before *и*, *г* changes into *з*, *к* into *ц*, *х* into *с*, in the nom. dat. voc. inst. loc. pl. of most nouns whose stems end in these consonants, e.g.

*бѣбрег (m.)*, *kidney*, nom. voc. pl. *бѣбрезн*, dat. inst. loc. *бѣбрезима*.

*вѣк (m.)*, *wolf*, nom. voc. pl. *вѣцн*, dat. inst. loc. *вѣцима*.

*сирѣмах (m.)*, *poor man*, nom. voc. pl. *сирѣмасн*, dat. inst. loc. *сирѣмасима*.

II. If *ц* and *з* are followed by *е* or *и*, they become *ч* and *ж*, e.g.

*зѣц (m.)*, *hare (masc.)*, voc. sing. *зѣче*, *зѣчица (f.)*, *hare (fem.)*.

*кнѣз (m.)*, *prince*, „ „ *кнѣже*.

*ѣтац (m.)*, *father*, „ „ *ѣче*.

III. In the case of verbs whose roots end in *г*, *к*, and *х*, these consonants coalesce with the *т* of the infinitive ending *-ти* and form *ѣ*, cf. p. 102.

IV. The palatal consonant *ј*, in such syllables as *-ја-*, *-је-*, *-ји-*, *-ју-*, affects most of the non-palatal consonants if they immediately precede it. Such consonants coalesce with *ј* into one sound, as follows :

*д + ј = ѣ*, e.g. *млаѣй (adj.)* = *younger*, derived from *млад + ји*<sup>1</sup>

*т + ј = ѣ*, e.g. *ѣѣй (adj.)* = *more angry* „ „ *ѣут + ји*

<sup>1</sup> -*ји* is the sign of the comparative.



з + j = ж, e.g. брѣжй ( <i>adj.</i> ) = <i>quicker</i> , derived from брз + ji			
с + j = ш, e.g. кйша ( <i>f.</i> ) = <i>rain</i>	„	„	кис + ja
ц + j = ч, e.g. ўжичанин ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>a native of ўжице</i>	„	„	ужиц + јанин
н + j = њ, e.g. тањй ( <i>adj.</i> ) = <i>thinner</i>	„	„	тан + ji
л + j = љ, e.g. весёље ( <i>n.</i> ) = <i>joy</i>	„	„	весел + је
г + j = ж, e.g. дражй ( <i>adj.</i> ) = <i>dearer</i>	„	„	драг + ji
к + j = ч, e.g. јачй ( <i>adj.</i> ) = <i>stronger</i>	„	„	јак + ji
х + j = ш, e.g. тйшй ( <i>adj.</i> ) = <i>quieter</i>	„	„	тих + ji

Further, if such consonants are in their turn preceded by з or с, these become respectively ж and ш, e.g.

грбэд (*m.*) = *bunch of grapes*, but грбжђе (*n.*) = *grapes* (collective noun), from грозђе = грозд-је.

лйст (*m.*) = *leaf, sheet (of paper)*, but лйшђе (*n.*) = *leaves* (collective noun), from лисђе = лист-је.

Бёсна (*f.*) = *Bosnia*, but Бёшњак (*m.*) = *a Bosnian (m.)*, from Босњак = Босн-јак.

Further, when the syllables beginning with j are immediately preceded by the consonants б, п, в, м, the letter л is inserted and coalesces with j, forming the consonant љ, e.g.

грўбљй ( <i>adj.</i> ) = <i>coarser, ruder</i> , derived from груб + ji		
скўплљй ( <i>adj.</i> ) = <i>more expensive, dearer</i>	„	„
жйвлљй ( <i>adj.</i> ) = <i>livelier</i>	„	„
бёзўмље ( <i>n.</i> ) = <i>madness</i>	„	„

V. Sometimes д and т disappear before ц, ч, and џ, e.g.

Nom. sing. оџац (*m.*), *father*, gen. sing. оџа, voc. sing. оџе  
 „ „ сўџац (*m.*), *judge*, „ „ сўџа, „ „ сўџе

But in some cases they are left unchanged, as in words which end in -так, e.g.

Nom. sing. почётак (*m.*) = *beginning*, nom. pl. почётци.

VI. If the groups of consonants эд, ет, шт precede the following consonants: б, к, л, љ, м, н, њ, -д and т are omitted for the sake of euphony, whereupon assimilation takes place, e.g.

рѡзба (*f.*) = *feast*, derived from рѡст+ба (рѡст (*m.*) = *guest*).  
мáсна (*adj. f.*, the *masc.* form is мáстан) = *greasy*, derived  
from маст+на (ма́ст (*f.*) = *fat*).

### 3. Double vowels and double consonants

There are no double vowels or double consonants in Serbo-Croatian.<sup>1</sup> If two identical vowels happen to come together they are each separately pronounced, e.g.

црнѡк = црѡ-ок = *black-eyed*.

пѡрати = по-ѡрати = *to finish ploughing*.

But if they are the result of the lapse of a consonant, they coalesce into one long vowel, e.g.

снá (*f.*) = *daughter-in-law*, for снáа from снáха. (N.B. the forms снáја and снáха are also used.)

сáт (*m.*) = *watch, hour*, for саат, from сáхат.<sup>2</sup>

If through assimilation or for any other reason two identical consonants happen to come together one of them is omitted, e.g.

трѣгнути = *to pull*, ѡтрѣгнути = *to pull away*, from ѡттрѣгнути—ѡтрѣгнути.

сáдити = *to plant*, расáдити = *to plant about*, from рассадити—разсадити.

### 5. THE ACCENT

The accent in Serbo-Croatian is musical, and is of four different kinds: there are two long and two short accents.

1. One of the two long is *rising*, marked ' as in вѣно (*n.*) = *wine*; the other is *falling*, marked ˘, as in злáто (*n.*) = *justice*.

There is no difficulty in distinguishing these; in the first the voice rises considerably before the beginning of the next syllable, e.g.

  
 и            ѣ    НО  
 ВИ

The only diphthongs in Serbo-Croatian are those ending in -j, e.g. мѡј = *mine*, крѡј (*m.*) = *end*; words such as нáука (*f.*) = *science* are regarded as of three syllables.

Cf. also such words as вѡ, p. 16.

In the second the voice falls considerably before the beginning of the second syllable, e.g.

зѣ́а  
a ↘  
a  
то

2. As for the two short accents, one of them is also *rising*, marked ` , as in село́ (n.) = *village*, жена́ (f.) = *woman* or *wife*; the other is falling, marked ˘ , as in ку́ха (f.) = *house*, по́ле (n.) = *field*. The difference between these may be illustrated: in the first the voice rises only slightly before the beginning of the next syllable, e.g.

село́, жена́  
се ↗ же ↗

In the second the voice falls abruptly before the beginning of the next syllable, e.g.

ку́ха, по́ле  
ку́ ↘ по́ ↘  
у́ха, о́ле

The difference between these two short accents is clearer when the short falling accent occurs on a word of one syllable, e.g. то́п (m.) = *cannon*.

то́ ↘  
оп

Each word can have only one of the four accents. In a word of more than one syllable the accent may come on any syllable except the last, *which is never accented*. Mono-syllabic words can only have one of the falling accents (˘, ˝). The long and the short *rising* accents (´, ˘) are usually followed by an unaccented syllable. Different forms of the same word, e.g. different cases of the same substantive, may be differently accented, and the accent may shift from one syllable to another, e.g. бѣ́ръ (m.) = *hill*, dat. sing. бѣ́рѣу, nom. pl. бѣ́рови, dat. pl. бѣ́ровѣма.

The only words which are not accented are the proclitics<sup>1</sup> and enclitics<sup>2</sup>; the former preceding and the latter following the

<sup>1</sup> These are the majority of the prepositions, the negative particle не, and such conjunctions as и, а, ни, да.

<sup>2</sup> These are the shortened forms of the personal and reflexive pronouns, such as ме, те, се, ми, ти, му, га, ъ, and the shortened

accented word, and forming virtually part of it, though in certain phrases the accent may go to a proclitic, when the following word has a falling accent, e.g. *код куће*<sup>1</sup>=*at home*, *за дан* (*дaн*)=*in a day*, in the former of which the preposition *код* takes the accent of the substantive *кућа*, while in the latter the preposition *за* takes the accent of the substantive *дан*, but changes it to ° (cf. p. 35).

The unaccented syllables may be either short or long. The long unaccented syllable is marked in the present volume by the sign °, e.g. *време* (*n.*) = *time, weather*, gen. pl. *временa*, *лопац* (*m.*) = *pot*, gen. pl. *лопаца*. Such long unaccented syllable (or syllables) always follow the accented syllable and never precede it.

The following is a list of important words which are spelt in the same way and only differentiated by accent :

град= <i>hail</i>	град= <i>town, fortress</i>
друга= <i>companion (f.)</i>	дру́га= <i>second (f.)</i>
ку́пити= <i>to buy</i>	кѹ́пити= <i>to pick up</i>
гòра= <i>wooded hill</i>	гѹ́ра= <i>worse (f.)</i>
дѹ́га= <i>rainbow</i>	дѹ́га= <i>long (f.)</i>
ра́нити= <i>to feed</i>	ра́нити= <i>to wound</i>
сѐло= <i>village meeting</i>	сѐло= <i>village</i>
пàс= <i>dog</i>	пàс=(1) <i>waist</i> , (2) <i>girdle</i>
ба́ба= <i>father</i>	ба́ба= <i>grandmother, old woman</i>
вра́та= <i>the door</i>	вра́та= <i>neck</i> (gen. sing.)
ка́да= <i>bath</i>	ка́да or ка́д= <i>when</i>
сàм= <i>alone (m.)</i>	сàм= <i>am</i>
сѐдим= <i>I grow gray</i>	сѐдим= <i>I sit</i>

## 6. THE DIALECTS

There are three main dialects : (1) the *sto*-dialect, (2) the *kaj*-dialect, and (3) the *ča*-dialect, which are the words for *what* in these three dialects respectively. The first, which is gradually superseding the other two, is spoken over by far the greater part of Serbian and Croatian territory, and is the most beautiful of the forms of the present of бити and хтѣти, and the interrogative particle ли.

<sup>1</sup> But this expression is also frequently accented код куће.

three dialects. It is the standard literary language of the Serbo-Croats. The *kaj*-dialect is spoken to the west of Agram and resembles Slovene. The *ča*-dialect is spoken comparatively over a very small area in N. Dalmatia and the islands. The *što*-dialect is divided into three sub-dialects which are differentiated by the threefold pronunciation of the long ē (the old Slavonic ě), namely e, je (or ње), and u. These are accordingly known as the *e*-‘sub’-dialect, the *je*-‘sub’-dialect, and the *u*-‘sub’-dialect (*u*=*u*), e.g.

*e*-subd. дѣте (*n.*)=*child*.

*je*-subd. дијете.

*u*-subd. дѹте.

The dialect chosen for this book is the *što*(=што)-dialect and its *e*-sub-dialect, which in recent years, at any rate as far as Serbian literature is concerned, has been gaining ground at the expense of the *je*-dialect. The *u*-dialect is used in certain parts of Dalmatia.

The *e*-dialect is spoken and written in almost the whole of the kingdom of Serbia, and in the Serbian districts of Southern Hungary. It is the *modern literary language* of these parts. The *je*-dialect predominates in Bosnia, Hercegovina, Montenegro, Dalmatia, and is the dialect in which the greater part of Serbian literature is written, including all the national epics as edited by Vuk Stefanović Karadžić, and also his classical translation of the Holy Scriptures; it is also the modern literary language of Croatia, Bosnia, Hercegovina, and Montenegro.

But the difference between the two is really small, and one who has mastered the *e*-dialect has no difficulty in understanding the *je*-dialect.

The essential difference is this. The old Slavonic ē (ě) has remained long in certain Serbo-Croatian words, while in others it has become short. Where it is still long the *e*-dialect has e, while the *je*-dialect has ње, the accent on which varies according to that on the same word in the *e*-dialect, e.g.

<i>e</i> -dialect : сѣно,	<i>je</i> -dialect : сѣјено= <i>hay</i>
рѣка,	ријѣка= <i>river</i>
ко́лѣвка,	ко́лијѣвка= <i>cradle</i>

Where it has become short the *e*-dialect has *e*, while the *je*-dialect has *je*, the accent remaining the same, e.g.

<i>e</i> -dialect: вѣра,	<i>je</i> -dialect: вјѣра = <i>faith, religion</i>
мѣсто,	мјѣсто = <i>place</i>
сѣдѣм,	сјѣдѣм = <i>I sit</i>

When in such cases *e* is preceded by *л* or *н* the *j* is naturally written in combination with these consonants, e.g.

*e*-dialect: лѣто, *je*-dialect: љѣто = *summer*

Similarly, when *e* is preceded by *т* or *д*, these consonants appear in the *je*-dialect as *ћ* or *ђ*, e.g.

<i>e</i> -dialect: дѣца,	<i>je</i> -dialect: ђѣца <sup>1</sup> = <i>children</i>
тѣрати,	ћѣрати <sup>1</sup> = <i>to drive</i> (transitive)

Finally, when *e* is followed by *о* or *ј*, it becomes *и* in the *je*-dialect, e.g.

<i>e</i> -dialect: дѣо,	<i>je</i> -dialect: дјѣо = <i>part</i>
Београд,	Бјеоград = <i>Belgrade</i>

<sup>1</sup> Though spellings such as дјѣца, тјѣрати, are also found.

# PART I

## CHAPTER I

### EASY PRONOUNS AND NOUNS

§ 1.	òBO = <i>this</i>	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{tô} \\ \text{òHO} \end{array} \right\} = \text{that}$
	òBO je = <i>this is</i>	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{tô je} \\ \text{òHO je} \end{array} \right\} = \text{that is}$
	òBO cy = <i>these are</i>	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{tô cy} \\ \text{òHO cy} \end{array} \right\} = \text{those are}$

These expressions are used, whatever the gender of the object referred to, as follows : òBO je, òBO cy refer to things near the first person, or to the speaker ; tò je, tò cy refer to things near the second person, or to the person spoken to ; òHO je, òHO cy refer to things which are at a considerable distance from both.

It is important to notice that the English phrases *these are* and *those are* are rendered in Serbian by òBO cy, tò cy, and òHO cy, which literally mean *this are* and *that are*.

§ 2. штā = *what*                      кѡ = *who*

In accordance with what has been said above, the answer to the questions

штā je òBO ? = *what is this ?*

кѡ je òBO ? = *who is this ?*

is usually

tô je = *that is*.

Similarly :

штā je tô ? = *what is that ?*

кѡ je tô ? = *who is that ?*

are answered by :

òво је = *this is*.

Similarly :

штà је òно ? = *what is that (yonder) ?*

кò је òно ? = *who is that (yonder) ?*

are answered by :

òно је = *that is*.

### § 3. Vocabulary

òво је :

нòж (m.) = *knife*

тањир (m.) = *plate*

слàнйк (m.) = *salt-cellar*

сàлвѣт (m.) = *napkin*

стò (m.) } = *table*

àстàл (m.) }

хлѣб (m.) } = *bread, loaf*

(х)лѣбац (m.) }

бòкàл (m.) = *jug*

кòнац (m.) = *cotton, thread*

прст (m.) = *finger*

чàј (m.) = *tea*

шàка (f.) = *handful*

рúка (f.) = *hand, arm*

нòга (f.) = *leg*

сòба (f.) = *room*<sup>2</sup>

мàрама (f.) = *handkerchief*

кràгна (f.) = *collar*

мàшна (f.) = *tie*

кòшуља (f.) = *shirt*

манжѣтна (f.) = *cuff*

плàјвàз (m.) = *pencil*

дйвит (m.) = *inkstand*

сàт (m.) = (1) *watch*, (2) *hour*

чàсòвник (m.) = *watch, clock*

чѣшаљ (m.) = *comb*

капýт (m.) = *coat*

прслук (m.) = *waistcoat*

кòверт (m.) = *envelope*

кýфер (m.) = *trunk*

сàндук (m.) = *wooden box*<sup>1</sup>

сйр (m.) = *cheese*

шѣкер (m.) = *sugar*

цйпела (f.) = *boot, shoe*

чàрапа (f.) = *sock, stocking*

чѣтка (f.) = *brush*

сýкња (f.) = *skirt*

блýза (f.) = *blouse*

хàљина (f.) = *ladies' dress*

зàвеса (f.) = *curtain*

рукàвица (f.) = *glove*

чàша (f.) = *tumbler*

<sup>1</sup> N.B. *letter-box* = сàндучић за писма.

<sup>2</sup> N.B. *room* = space = мѣсто.



кашпика (f.) = spoon <sup>1</sup>	ѱсна or ѱсница (f.) = lip
кашпичица (f.) = tea-spoon	кòса (f.) = (1) hair (collective ; a hair = дла̀ка), (2) scythe
ма̀рка (f.) = stamp	и́гла (f.) = needle
ха̀ртија <sup>2</sup> (f.) = paper	чи́ода (f.) = pin
òлòвка (f.) = pencil	òра̀да (f.) = chin, beard
трèпавица (f.) = eye-lid	гла̀ва (f.) = head
ма̀стиòница (f.) = inkstand	
ви́љушка (f.) = fork	
ли́це (n.) = face	пèро (n.) = pen
чèло (n.) = forehead	одèло (n.) = suit, clothes
òко (n.) = eye	дугме (n.) = button
ѱво (or ѱхо) (n.) = ear	зла̀то (n.) = gold
грèло (n.) = throat	срèбро (n.) = silver
кòлено (n.) = knee	òлово (n.) = lead
стòпало (n.) = foot	гвòжђе (n.) = iron
ма̀стило (n.) = ink	пи́смо (n.) = letter
	то је :
прòзор (m.) = window	бри́жач (m.) = razor
зи́д (m.) = wall	дѱшек (m.) = mattress
пòд (m.) } = floor	са̀пѱн (m.) = soap
па̀тос (m.) }	ѱбрус (m.) }
òрмāн (m.) = cupboard	пèшкѱр (m.) } = towel
покрѱвāч (m.) = blanket, quilt <sup>3</sup>	чи́вѱлук (m.) = peg, or hook
крèвет (m.) = bed, bedstead	штāп (m.) = stick
ча̀ршав (m.) = (1) linen sheet, (2) table-cloth	мèд (m.) = honey
застѱрāч (m.) = (1) coloured covering, (2) carpet	дѱвāн (m.) = tobacco
ѱ̀лим (m.) = carpet, rug	ја̀стук (m.) = pillow
умѱваòник (m.) = washstand	зѱб (m.) = tooth
	нòс (m.) = nose

<sup>1</sup> Other words for *spoon* are òжица, жѱица, and ла̀жица.

<sup>2</sup> *Blotting-paper* = упи́жа̀ха ха̀ртија (lit. *which drinks up*).

<sup>3</sup> Other words are òòбе (n.) and jòрган (m.).

фѹруна (f.) = oven  
 пѣћ (f.) = stove  
 клѹпа (f.) = form, bench  
 табла (f.) = blackboard  
 слика (f.) = picture  
 кѹтија (f.) = box (smallish)  
 кѹрпа (f.) = basket  
 лампа (f.) = lamp  
 свѣќа (f.) = candle  
 столница (f.) = chair  
 подстеља (f.) = bedding  
 навлака (f.) = pillow-case

цигара (f.) = cigar  
 цигарѣта (f.) = cigarette  
 даска (f.) = board, plank  
 вѣтра (f.) = fire  
 таваница (f.) = ceiling  
 сѣкира (f.) = axe  
 вода (f.) = water  
 чѹрба (f.) = soup  
 карта (f.) = (1) card, (2) rail-  
 way-ticket  
 софа (f.) = sofa <sup>1</sup>

оглѣдало (n.) = looking-glass  
 стакло (n.) = (1) glass (the  
 material), (2) a (glass)  
 bottle, <sup>2</sup> e.g. of water or wine  
 јѣло (n.) = dish (sc. food),  
 anything to eat  
 вѹће (n.) = fruit  
 јáје (or јáјце) (n.) = egg  
 млѣко (n.) = milk <sup>3</sup>  
 мѣсо (n.) = meat

брãшно (n.) = flour  
 чекмѣце (n.) = a drawer <sup>4</sup>  
 слиãткѹ (n.) = jam  
 маãло (n.) = butter (cf. p. 51)  
 грѹжђе (n.) = grapes (collec-  
 tive)  
 бѹре (n.) = barrel, cask  
 сѣно (n.) = hay  
 пѣиво (n.) = beer  
 вино (n.) = wine

òно је :

вѹјник (m.) = soldier  
 офицѣр (m.) = officer  
 начелник (m.) = the head  
 (e.g. of a district or in-  
 stitution)

брѹд (m.) = (1) ford, (2) ship <sup>5</sup>  
 чáмац (m.) = canoe, rowing-  
 boat  
 мѣсец (m.) = (1) moon, (2)  
 month

<sup>1</sup> Other words are дивãн and миндѣрлук.

<sup>2</sup> Or флãша.

<sup>3</sup> N.B. кѣселѹ (masc. кѣсео) млѣко is the sour milk much drunk in the Near East.

<sup>4</sup> Another word is фијѹка.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. пãрѹбрѹд = steamship.

извор (m.) = <i>spring</i> (sc. <i>water</i> )	мост (m.) = <i>bridge</i> <sup>1</sup>
бунѧр (m.) = <i>well</i> (sc. <i>water</i> )	тоѧнѧ (m.) = <i>church-tower</i>
вѧз (or влѧк) (m.) = <i>train</i>	кѧнѧ (m.) = <i>horse</i>
хѧтел (m.) = <i>hotel</i>	вѧ (m.) = <i>ox</i>
улица (f.) = <i>street</i>	скѧла (f.) = <i>ferry</i>
шкѧла (f.) = <i>school</i>	звѧзда (f.) = <i>star</i>
црква (f.) = <i>church</i>	тѧва (f.) = <i>grass</i>
ѧпштина (f.) = <i>town-hall</i>	капија (f.) = <i>gateway</i>
планина (f.) = <i>mountain</i>	рѧпа (f.) = <i>hole</i> (of any kind)
река (f.) = <i>river</i>	хѧприја (f.) = <i>bridge</i> <sup>1</sup>
жѧлезница (f.) = <i>railway</i>	сијалица (f.) = <i>electric bulb</i>
лађа (f.) = <i>steamer</i> <sup>2</sup>	тица (or птица) (f.) = <i>bird</i>
кула (f.) = <i>tower</i>	
двѧриште (n.) = <i>(back)-yard</i>	купатило (n.) = (1) <i>bath-room</i> ,
сѧнце (n.) = <i>sun</i>	(2) <i>bathing-place</i>
небо (n.) = <i>sky</i>	мѧре (n.) = <i>sea</i>
поље (n.) = <i>field</i>	теѧе (n.) = <i>calf</i>
брѧдо (n.) = <i>hill</i>	пѧсе (n.) = <i>sucking-pig</i>
јѧзеро (n.) = <i>lake</i>	куче (n.) = <i>puppy</i>
наѧелство (n.) = <i>county-hall</i>	жѧдрѧбе (n.) = <i>foal</i>
and <i>police-court</i>	пристанѧште (n.) = (1) <i>har-</i>
	<i>bour</i> , (2) <i>landing-stage</i>

гдѧ је = *where is* ?

бѧрберин (m.) = <i>barber</i>	носѧч (m.)	} = <i>the porter</i>
кѧчијѧш (m.) = <i>coachman</i>	ѧмалин (m.)	
гѧзда (m.) = <i>the landlord</i>	пѧтѧѧ (m.) = <i>luggage</i>	
кѧлнер (m.)	дућѧн (m.) = <i>shop</i>	
момак (m.)		

<sup>1</sup> мост is usually *larger* than хѧприја.

<sup>2</sup> See p. 28.

пра́ља (f.) = <i>laundrywoman</i>	гòстионица (f.) = <i>restaurant</i> <sup>1</sup>
слу́шкиња (f.) } = <i>house-</i>	ца̀рина̀рница (f.) = <i>custom-</i>
сòбарица (f.) } <i>maid</i>	<i>house</i> <sup>2</sup>
по́шта (f.) = <i>the post-office</i>	ста̀ница (f.) = <i>station</i>
канцелàрија (f.) = <i>office,</i>	
<i>bureau</i>	

òво су (Plural Nouns): гдè су = *where are?*

но̀сила (n.) = <i>stretcher</i>	дèсни (f.) = <i>gums</i>
у̀ста (n.) = <i>mouth</i>	ча̀кшире (f.) } = <i>trousers</i>
лѐђа (n.) = <i>back</i>	панталóне (f.) }
вра́та (n.) = <i>door</i>	кљéште (f.) = <i>pincers</i>
кòла (n.) = <i>carriage</i>	ма̀пнице (f.) = <i>tongs</i>
га̀ће (f.) = <i>drawers, pants</i>	са̀днице (f.) = <i>sledge</i>
гру̀ди (f.) } = <i>breast, chest</i>	ви́ле (f.) = <i>pitchfork</i>
прèи (f.) }	лèстнице (f.) }
ма̀казе (f.) = <i>scissors</i>	ста̀бе (f.) } = <i>ladder</i>
гу̀сле (f.) = <i>Serbian one-</i>	мèрдвине (f.) }
<i>stringed violin</i>	на̀очàри (f.) = <i>spectacles</i>
ста̀пенице (f.) = <i>stairs</i>	љу̀ди (m.) = <i>men, people</i>
но̀вине (f.) = <i>newspaper</i> <sup>3</sup>	тѐра̀знье = <i>weighing-scales</i>

### Reading Exercise

1. Òво је стò, тò је сàт, а òно је ча̀ша.
2. Òвде је нòж, ту́ је та̀њир, а онде је хлèб.
3. Òвде су ка̀пут и прèслук, ту́ су ма̀рама и кра̀гна, а онде су ко̀шуља и ма̀нжèтне.
4. Гдè је нòж?—Òвде (је).
5. Гдè је та̀њир?—Ту́ (је).
6. Гдè је хлèб?—Онде (је).
7. Гдè су ка̀пут и прèслук?—Òвде (су).
8. Гдè су ко̀шуља и ма̀нжèтне?—Онде (су).
9. Чèтка за кòсу.
10. Чèтка за одèло.
11. Чèтка за збу̀е.
12. Чèтка за ципèле.
13. Чèтка за шèшир.

<sup>1</sup> Or *restoràn*, cf. also p. 52.

<sup>2</sup> ца̀рина = *toll* or *custom* or *duty*.

<sup>3</sup> *One number of a newspaper* = *јèдан брòј нòвинà* or *јèдне нòвине*; N.B. *news* = *новина*.

14. Хартѿја и кòверт. 15. Мърка за пїсмо. 16. Пòштанске мърке. 17. Мàстило је у мàстиòници. 18. Хартѿја је у кòверту. 19. Чършав зà стò. 20. Чършав за крèвет. 21. Застїрãч зà стò (ог за крèвет, ог зà пòд (пàтос)). 22. Ђїлим је на пòду. 23. Пèшкїр је на ўмиваòнику. 24. Слїка је на зїду. 25. Лãмпа и свèќа су на стòлу. 26. Вòда је у бокáлу. 27. Бòкàл за вòду. 28. Бўре за вїно. 29. Јãгње је ў дворїшту. 30. Кòњ и тèле су ў пољу.

## Notes

2. Óвде=*here*, тў=*there*, онде=*there (yonder)*. 3. и=*and*, а=*and* or *but*. 4. гдè=*where*. 9. за=*for*. 16. =*postage stamps*. 17. у=*in*. 22. на=*on*.

## CHAPTER 2

THE PRESENT TENSE OF *TO BE*

THE verbs бїти=*to be*, and хтèти=*to wish, to want, to be willing*, in Serbian have two functions. In the first place they are used in their literal meaning, and in the second as auxiliary verbs: (1) бїти corresponding to the English verb *to have*, (2) хтèти corresponding to the English *shall* and *will*.

The personal pronouns are:

јã = <i>I</i>	мї = <i>we</i>	
тї = <i>thou</i>	вї = <i>you</i>	
òн = <i>he</i>	òни (m.)	} = <i>they</i>
òна = <i>she</i>	òне (f.)	
òно = <i>it</i>	òна (n.)	

The second person тї is always used in Serbian amongst relatives and intimate friends of the same age, and by all country people under all circumstances, but its use is not to be recommended to foreigners.

## БҮҮҮ

This verb has in the present a *full* and a *short* form :

## Present tense

## (a) Full form :

- |                                |                             |
|--------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| 1. (jâ) jècam = <i>I am</i>    | (mî) jècmo = <i>we are</i>  |
| 2. (tî) jèci = <i>thou art</i> | (vî) jècte = <i>you are</i> |
| 3. (òh) jèct = <i>he is</i>    | (òhi) jècy                  |
| (òha) jèct = <i>she is</i>     | (òhe) jècy                  |
| (òho) jèct = <i>it is</i>      | (òha) jècy                  |
- } = *they are*

## (b) Short form :

In practice the commonest form of the verb is a shortened one, consisting of the personal pronoun and the second half of the verb form, *except* in the 3rd person sing., where the last two letters of the verb form are omitted :

- |                            |                         |
|----------------------------|-------------------------|
| 1. jâ cam = <i>I am</i>    | mî cmo = <i>we are</i>  |
| 2. tî ci = <i>thou art</i> | vî cte = <i>you are</i> |
| 3. òh je = <i>he is</i>    | òhi cy (m.)             |
| òha je = <i>she is</i>     | òhe cy (f.)             |
| òho je = <i>it is</i>      | òha cy (n.)             |
- } = *they are*

## The use of the Personal Pronouns

Generally the personal pronouns are omitted with all verbs unless emphasis is laid on them, but they are always retained with these shortened forms of the present tense of БҮҮҮ.

## Questions

The *interrogative* is formed by putting the interrogative particle **ли** immediately after the full verb forms, but in the 3rd person sing. after the short form : jè ли ? If the pronoun is not omitted its place is after the interrogative particle :

јѐсам ли (ја) ? = *am I ?*

јѐ ли (ѐн, ѐна, ѐно) ? = *is he, she, it ?*

јѐсте ли (ви) ? = *are you ?*

јѐсу ли (ѐни, ѐне, ѐна) ? = *are they ?*

A more emphatic form of the interrogative is that introduced by the conjunction *зѐр*, which has no exact English equivalent ; it expresses surprise or incredulity :

зѐр сам ја ? ! = *am I really ? !*

зѐр је ѐн, ѐна, ѐно ? ! = *is he, she, it ? !*

зѐр смо ми ? ! = *are we ? !*

зѐр су ѐни, ѐне, ѐна ? ! = *are they ? !*

Questions can also be asked by means of the conjunction *да* followed by the interrogative particle *ли* ; both are then put before the short verb form, and the personal pronoun, if it is used, is placed after the verb, e.g.

да ли сам (ја) ? = *am I ?*

да ли је (ѐн, ѐна, ѐно) ? = *is he, she, it ?*

да ли сте (ви) ? = *are you ?*

да ли су (ѐни, ѐне, ѐна) ? = *are they ?*

This expression corresponds to the French idiom : *est-ce que . . . ?*

In practice, however, questions are very frequently asked without using any of these particles, and then the verb is used in its affirmative form, i.e. pronoun first and verb second, emphasis being laid on the verb, and the voice being raised to indicate that it is a question ; the question is asked in the form of an assumption, e.g.

ви сте Србин ? = *you are a Serbian ?*

The other forms are :

јѐсте ли ви Србин ? } = *are you a Serbian ?*  
 да ли сте ви Србин ? }

зѐр сте ви Србин ? ! = *are you really a Serbian ?*

It is to be noticed that, when the sentence begins with an interrogative pronoun or adverb such as *кѡлико* = *how much*, *how many*, *кѡд* = *when*, *гдѣ* = *where*, *кѡ* = *who*, *штѧ* = *what*, no interrogative particle is necessary, e.g.

*кѡ* *сте* *вѣ* ? = *who are you ?*    *штѧ* *сте* *вѣ* ? = *what are you ?*

### Negations

The *negative* is formed by prefixing the short forms with the negative particle *ни* (originally *не* *je*), e.g.

- |                                    |                                 |                         |
|------------------------------------|---------------------------------|-------------------------|
| 1. (jâ) нѣсам = <i>I am not</i>    | (мѣ) нѣсмо = <i>we are not</i>  |                         |
| 2. (тѣ) нѣси = <i>thou art not</i> | (вѣ) нѣсте = <i>you are not</i> |                         |
| 3. (ѡн) нѣје = <i>he is not</i>    | (ѡни) нѣсу                      | } = <i>they are not</i> |
| (ѡна) нѣје = <i>she is not</i>     | (ѡне) нѣсу                      |                         |
| (ѡно) нѣје = <i>it is not</i>      | (ѡна) нѣсу                      |                         |

Sometimes the negative is combined with an interrogation, in which case the verb is placed first, the interrogative particle *ли* second, and the pronoun, if required, last, e.g. *нѣсам ли* (jâ) ? = *am I not ?* ! *нѣсте ли* вѣ ? ! = *are you not ?* !

If such questions are asked in a tone of surprise or incredulity they can be preceded by *зѧр*, cf. p. 33, e.g.

*зѧр нѣсте вѣ* *Ѣнглѣз* ? ! = *are you not an Englishman !*

*нѣсам, jâ сам* *Америкѧнац* = *no, I am not ; I am an American.*

*Note.* There is another form of the present tense of this verb which is *only* used in subordinate clauses, and comes to have the meaning of a future ; it is known as the *perfective present* (or exact future), and its use implies the completion of an action in the future (cf. pp. 170, 185) :

- |                                    |                              |                     |
|------------------------------------|------------------------------|---------------------|
| 1. (jâ) бѣдѣм = <i>I am (I be)</i> | (мѣ) бѣдѣмо = <i>we are</i>  |                     |
| 2. (тѣ) бѣдѣш = <i>thou art</i>    | (вѣ) бѣдѣте = <i>you are</i> |                     |
| 3. (ѡн) бѣдѣ = <i>he is</i>        | (ѡни) бѣдѣ                   | } = <i>they are</i> |
| (ѡна) бѣдѣ = <i>she is</i>         | (ѡне) бѣдѣ                   |                     |
| (ѡно) бѣдѣ = <i>it is</i>          | (ѡна) бѣдѣ                   |                     |

The use of this tense is illustrated on p. 170.



## Reading Exercise

1. Ћста су на лицу. 2. Прѳзор и врата су у зиду.  
 3. Чај и шећер. 4. Чај са шећером. 5. Чај без шећера. 6. Вафра гори. 7. Вафра не гори. 8. Ја сам официр. 9. Ти си војник. 10. Он је начелник.  
 11. Где је начелство? 12. Слика је на прозору. 13. Скела је на реци. 14. Звезде су на небу.<sup>1</sup> 15. Типе су на трави. 16. Јагње и прасе су на извору. 17. Ципеле су под креветом. 18. Во је на брду.<sup>1</sup> 19. Лађа је на језеру. 20. Општина је близу цркве и школе. 21. Куће је на улици.<sup>1</sup> 22. Ми смо официјари. 23. Ви сте војници. 24. Они су начелници. 25. Коњ и во су на куприји. 26. Где су кола? — Ено ог ето их<sup>2</sup> ~~су~~ (ог су). 27. Где су маказе? — Ево их<sup>2</sup> ~~су~~ (ог су). 28. Где су уста? — На лицу. 29. Где је нос? — На лицу. 30. Машице су код ватре.<sup>1</sup> 31. Брд је на мору.<sup>1</sup> 32. Брд је у пристаништу. 33. Где је брд? — На мору (ог у пристаништу). 34. Кутија је у корпи. 35. Цигарете су на столу. 36. Где су цигарете? — На столу.

## Notes

4. са=*with*. 5. без=*without*. 6. гори=*burns*. 7. не гори=*does not burn*. 17. под=*under*. 20. близу=*near*. 26. ето=*there is, there are*; ено=*there is, there are (yonder)*, the French *voilà*. 27. ево=*here is, here are*, the French *voici*. 30. код=*near (or at the house of)*=the French *chez*.

<sup>1</sup> Besides на небу, на брду, на улици, код ватре, на мору, accentuations such as на нѳбу, на брду, на улици, код ватре, на мору are very frequent (cf. p. 22).

<sup>2</sup> их, gen. pl. of оне and она (cf. p. 54). After the interjections ево, ето, ено, which are used in the same way as ово, то, оно (cf. p. 25), the *genitive* is used. But phrases such as ево су кола=*here is the carriage*, ето (ено) су маказе=*there are the scissors*, are contracted from ево, овде су кола and ето (ено), онде су маказе.

## CHAPTER 3

## SUBSTANTIVES

(and the use of the cases without prepositions)

THERE is no article in the Serbian language, either definite or indefinite, e.g.

цвѣт (*m.*) = (1) *a flower*, or (2) *the flower*.

сѡба (*f.*) = (1) *a room*, or (2) *the room*.

дѣте (*n.*) = (1) *a child*, or (2) *the child*.

There are three genders : masculine, feminine, and neuter ; and seven cases : (1) nominative, (2) genitive, (3) dative, (4) accusative, (5) vocative, (6) instrumental, (7) locative (or prepositional<sup>1</sup>).

Besides the singular and the plural there is also a dual number, which is preserved nowadays in a few words (cf. pp. 40, 47, 49, 50).

In Serbian not only all substantives, but also all pronouns and adjectives, and certain numerals, are declined.

Nouns and adjectives, the nominative of which ends in a consonant, are usually masculine, those ending in o or e are almost all neuter, while those ending in a are mostly feminine.

There are three different declensions of substantives.

To the *first* belong all the masculine nouns, *except* those ending in the nom. sing. in -a. In the nom. sing. they end either in a consonant or in -o, or -e ; in the gen. sing. they end in -a, e.g. прозор = *window*, сѣн = *son*, коњ = *horse*, нѡж = *knife*, Мѣрко = *Mark*, Пѡвле = *Paul*, вѡ<sup>2</sup> = *ox*, сѡко<sup>2</sup> = *falcon*, нѡсаѡ<sup>2</sup> = *business, job*, cf. pp. 44 ff.

<sup>1</sup> So called because never used except with a preposition.

<sup>2</sup> These originally ended in -п, cf. p. 16.

To the *second* belong all feminine nouns, and those masculine nouns ending in -a in the nom. sing. just mentioned. The great majority of feminine nouns end in -a in the nom. sing.; a certain number end in a consonant, very few end in -o, such as мѣао<sup>1</sup> = *idea, thought*, сѡ<sup>1</sup> = *salt*, and two irregular feminine nouns end in -и, viz. мѣти = *mother*, and кѣти = *daughter*.

Those ending in -a, feminine as well as masculine, have in the gen. sing. -e; those ending in a consonant have in the gen. sing. -и (cf. pp. 46-48).

The word дѡа = *time*, though ending in -a, is neuter, but is not declined (cf. p. 161).

Examples : жѣна (f.) = (1) *woman*, (2) *wife*, дѣша (f.) = *soul*, ствѣп (f.) = *thing*, слѣга (m.) = *man-servant*, cf. pp. 46 ff.

To the *third* belong all the neuter nouns; these end in the nom. sing. in -o or -e, and in the gen. sing. in -a. Some of them insert in the gen. sing. the syllable -ен or -ет before -a.

Examples : сѣло = *village*, пѡѣ = *field*, плѣме = *tribe*, дѣгме = *button*, cf. pp. 49 ff.

1. In the singular, the dative and the locative of all substantives are the same, while in the plural the dative, instrumental, and locative are all the same, but in both numbers feminine endings are different from those of the masculine and neuter.

2. The acc. sing. of all masculine nouns which refer to an *animate* or a once animate being is the same as the gen. sing. The acc. sing. of all masculine nouns which refer to *inanimate* things is the same as the nom. sing.

3. Both in the singular and in the plural of all neuter nouns the nominative, accusative, and vocative are the same.

<sup>1</sup> These originally ended in -и, cf. p. 16.

4. The nominative, accusative, and vocative plural of all feminine nouns are the same.

5. The nominative and vocative plural of all masculine nouns are the same.

The following are a few of the commonest substantival suffixes :

### 1. Masculine

-aj, nouns derived from verbs, e.g. пòложāj = *position*, from положити = *to place*.

-ap, to denote agents, e.g. стòлāp = *carpenter*, from стò = *table*.

-ин, to denote origin, religion, profession, e.g. Јèвpeнн = *Jew*, Бўгapин = *a Bulgar (m.)*, cf. p. 46.

-ник, denoting agents, e.g. ўметнїк = *artist*, from ўмети.

-тељ, to denote agents, e.g. прїјатељ = *friend*.

-ић, the masculine diminutive, e.g. мòмчић = *a little boy*; this is particularly common in surnames, implying 'son', e.g. Пòповић, the common surname Рòповић: пòп = *priest*<sup>1</sup>, пòпов = *belonging (masc.) to the priest* (cf. p. 63).

-ак, or -јак, e.g. ўстaнaк = *rebellion*, from ўстати = *to rise*, мòмак = *a young man*, Бòшњāк = *a Bosnian (masc.)*.

-ац, e.g. тр̀гoвaц = *merchant*, Хèрцeгoвaц = *a man from Hercegovina*, Дaлмaтїнaц = *a Dalmatian (m.)*, Црнoгòрaц = *a Montenegrin (m.)*.

-џија (Turkish), to denote profession, e.g. кaвèџија = *innkeeper*, also мexaнџија.

-лук (Turkish), to denote locality or use, e.g. миндèрлук = *sofa*, пpслук = *waistcoat* ('breast-piece').

<sup>1</sup> N.B. a more reverent term is свèштeнїк.

## 2. Feminine

-иња, denoting origin, religion, profession, &c., e.g.

Грџиња = *a Greek woman*, from Грџ = *a Greek*.<sup>1</sup>

-ица, denoting agents, e.g. пријатељица = *friend*; also places, e.g. чекаџница = *waiting-room*, читаџница = *reading-room*.

-ка, denoting female beings, e.g. дџвџјка = *girl*, cf. дџвџјчица = *a little girl*.

-ад, feminine collectives, e.g. мџмчџд = *the young boys*.

-ост, for abstract nouns, e.g. рџдџост = *joy*, џметност = *art*.

-ина, for derivative nouns of various kinds, e.g. џтаџбина = *fatherland*, тџлетина = *veal*, планџина = *mountain*.

-ска, for names of countries, e.g. Бџгарска = *Bulgaria*, Тџрска = *Turkey*, Ўгарска = *Hungary* (also Маџарска), Швајцарска = *Switzerland*.

-ија, for names of countries, e.g. Албџнија (or Арбџнија) = *Albania*,<sup>2</sup> Рџмџнија = *Rumania*,<sup>3</sup> Аџстрија = *Austria*.

## 3. Neuter

-је, for collective nouns, e.g. лџшџе = *leaves*, from лџст = *a leaf*, кџмџење = *stones*, from кџмен = *a stone*.  
*foliage*  
*collection of*

-ство, for abstract nouns, e.g. богџство = *wealth*.

-ње, for verbal nouns, e.g. ујџедињење = *unification*, вџжбџње = *practice*, имџње = *property*.

## The use of the cases without Prepositions

(For their use *with* prepositions, cf. pp. 153 ff.)

The *nominative* is used as in other languages, but for foreigners it is very important to remember that the *vocative* must always be used in addressing anybody, e.g. Дџбар дџн,

<sup>1</sup> Greece = Грџка.

<sup>2</sup> An Albanian = Арнџутин.

<sup>3</sup> A Rumanian = Рџмџн.

господине Подовићу! = *good morning, Mr. Popović!*, добро вече, госпођо (or госпођице) = *good evening, Madame* (or *Mademoiselle*). N.B. in addressing ladies the surname is most frequently omitted; otherwise Mrs. Popović is: госпођа Подовић or Подовићка; Miss Popović: госпођица Подовић or Подовићева, of which the shorter forms are preferred, and also are usually not declined.

The *genitive* is used as follows :

1. To denote possession, when the name of the owner is qualified in any way, e.g. то је књига мога брата = *that is the book of my brother*; otherwise possessive adjectives very often take its place, e.g. то је братовљева књига = *that is the (sc. my) brother's book*.

2. After expressions denoting a quantity of anything, e.g. кôмāд меса = *a piece of meat*, парче шећера (or хлеба) = *a piece of sugar* (or *bread*), фџнта масла = *a pound of butter*, пола фџнте чаја =  $\frac{1}{2}$  lb. of tea, много људи = *many people*, мало новца = *little money*, хòдете ли сира? = *do you want any cheese?* имā ли вòћа? = *is there any fruit?*

3. In negative sentences, especially after the verb нѣмати (cf. p. 111), e.g. нѣмāм срѣће = *I have no luck*, нѣма вина = *there is no wine*, нѣма нѣкога = *there is no one*, but N.B. нѣма нѣшта = *there is nothing*.

4. To denote the quality of anything, e.g. хòтел првога рѣдā = *a hotel of the first class*, кāрта друге клāсе = *ticket of the second class*, чòвек нѣског рāста = *a man of low stature*, брзих нòгу (gen. of dual) = *of fast legs*, вредних рѹкѹ (gen. of dual) = *having strong hands* (sc. *industrious*).

5. In expressions of time, e.g. òве нòћи = *this night* (either *last* or *next*), свāкога дāна = *every day*, прòшле (идѹће) гòдине (нѣдеље) = *last (next) year (week)*, прòшлог (идѹћег)

месеца = *last (next) month* ; for expressions of the *date* and the *time of day*, cf. p. 98 f.

The *dative* is used :

1. To show direction, e.g. идемо кући = *we are going home*.
2. In such expressions as : дајте му ову књигу = *give him this book*, пишите ми често = *write to me often*, пружите ми со = *pass me the salt*, реците им = *tell them*.
3. Possession, e.g. отац му је болестан = *his father is ill*, колико вам је година ? = *how old are you ?*
4. In impersonal expressions, cf. pp. 115 ff.

The *accusative* is used as follows :

1. After transitive verbs as in other languages, e.g. читам књигу = *I am reading a book*.
2. In expressions of space, time, &c., e.g. остаћу овде недељу (месец, годину, all these frequently followed by дана, lit. *of days*) = *I shall stay here a week (a month, a year)*, ова планина је висока хиљаду и две стотине метара = *this mountain is 1,200 metres high*, сваки (цео) дан = *every (the whole) day*, сваку (целу) ноћ = *every (the whole) night*.
3. In impersonal expressions, e.g. стид ме је = *I am ashamed*, also срамòта ме је (cf. chap. 20), lit. *shame me is*.

The *instrumental* is used as follows :

1. To denote the instrument or the means by which anything is done, e.g. не могу да сечем овим тупим ножем = *I cannot cut with this blunt knife*, путоваћемо лађом до Београда па оданде возом (ог железницом или кољима) до Крагујевца = *we shall travel by steamer to Belgrade and thence by rail or by carriage to Kragujevac*.
2. To denote direction, e.g. јашем пољем = *I am riding through the field*, идемо улицом = *we are going along the street*.

3. To denote manner, e.g. јашем кâсом = *I am riding at a trot*, ђн ђде трком = *he went off* (aorist from отићи, cf. p. 188) *at a run*, ђни гѡворе шапâтом = *they are speaking in a whisper*, ѡдите рѡдом = *go in turn, one after the other*.

4. In certain expressions of time, e.g. нѡдѡлом (N.B. inst. sing.) = *on Sundays*, нѡћу = *by night*, on the analogy of which has also been formed дâњу = *by day*.

5. To denote comparison (mostly in poetry, instead of као + nom.), e.g. вѡлѡм ѡмрѡти нѡго рѡбѡм жѡвети = *I prefer to die than to live as a slave*.

The *locative* is used only after prepositions, cf. pp. 157, 159.

### Reading Exercise

Кâко се кâже на српском <sup>1</sup> <i>hand</i> ?	} What is the	
Кâко се зѡве на српском <i>hand</i> ?		} Serbian
Кâко се српски <sup>2</sup> кâже (or зѡве) <i>hand</i> ?		

Мѡлѡм вас, *please* (lit. *I beg you*) ; дâјте ми, *give me* ; прѡјжите ми, *pass me* ; донѡсите ми, *bring me* ; кўпите ми, *buy me* ; хвâла вам ог фâла вам, *thank you* ; хвâла, *thanks*<sup>3</sup> ; хвâла (ог фâла) лѡпо, *thank you (nicely)* ; вѡлика вам хвâла ог вѡлико вам хвâла, *thank you very much* ; мнѡго вам хвâла, *many thanks*.

Знâте ли ? *do you know* ? знâм, *I do (know)* ; нѡ знâм, *I don't know* ; кâжите ми, *tell me* ; извѡните ме ог опрѡстите ми, *excuse me, I beg your pardon*.

Кâко сте ? *How do you do* ? Врло дѡбро, хвâла, *Thanks, very well*. Кâко сте ви ? *How are you* ? Нѡсам дѡбро ог није ми дѡбро, *I am not well*. Не ђсекâм се дѡбро, *I don't feel well*. Штâ вам је ? *What is the matter with you* ? Бѡлѡ ме глâва, *I have a headache*. Бѡлѡ ме зўб, *I have*

<sup>1</sup> Sc. *јѡзику (language)*, 'on Serbian'.

<sup>2</sup> Is an adverb, 'Serbian fashion'.

<sup>3</sup> Lit. *praise*.



*toothache*. Бòлѣ ме нòга, *My leg hurts (me)*. Бòлѣ ме стòмàк, *My stomach aches* (cf. p. 41).

Дòбар дàн ! *good day* ! дòбро јутрò ! *good morning* ! дòбро вèче ! *good evening* ! лàку нòћ<sup>1</sup> ! ор дòбру нòћ ! *good night* ! збòгом,<sup>2</sup> *good-bye*, дò виђèњà, *till we meet again*. Кудà кèте ор кудà идèте ? *Where are you going* ? Дòђите к мèни, *Come to me*. Ѓдите овàмо ор дòђите овàмо, *Come here*. Мòлѣм вас, чèкàјте мàло, *Please wait a little*. Хàјде ор àјде, *Come along (thou)*, хàјдете, *come along here (you)*, хàјдемо, *let us go*.

1. Мòлѣм вас, донèсите ми вòде (вìна, шèкèра, хлèба, &c.). 2. Мòлѣм вас, гдè је нàчелство (ор полиција ор хòтел А) ? 3. Донèсите ми, мòлѣм вас, слàник и сàлвèт. 4. Мòлѣм, пружите ми хлèб. 5. Гдè су кòла, мòлѣм ? Пред хòтелом. 6. Мòлѣм вас знàте ли гдè сèди<sup>3</sup> (ор стàнује<sup>4</sup>), дòктор В ? Опрдèтите, нè знàм. 7. Кàжите ми, мòлѣм вас, кàко се зòве òво јèло ? 8. Знàте ли кàко се зòве òно сèло (ор òва вàрош) ?

### Important notes

In Serbian two and even three negative words are often necessary in a negative phrase, where in English only one is required, e.g.

òн нè чује = *he does not hear*.

òн нѣкàд нè чује = *he never hears*.

òн нѣкàд нѣштà нè чује = *he never hears anything*.

нè = *not*.

нѣкàд (*adv.*) = *never*.

нѣштà (*pron.*) = *nothing*.

<sup>1</sup> *Acc., sc. жèлѣм вам = I wish you.*

<sup>2</sup> *From с Бòгом = with God.*

<sup>3</sup> *Lit. sits, sc. lives, from сèдети.*

<sup>4</sup> *Lives, resides, from станòвати.*

## CHAPTER 4

## DECLENSION OF SUBSTANTIVES

## I. Declension

(MASCULINE NOUNS, EXCEPT THOSE IN -A)

STEMS in ж, љ, ј, љ, њ, ѣ, ч, ц, ш are called *soft*, the rest *hard*. The stem is found by cutting off the final vowel of the gen. sing.

A. Examples of soft stems : коњ = *horse*, нож = *knife*.

Sing. Nom.	коњ	нож
Gen.	коња	ножа
Dat.	коњу	ножу
Acc.	коња	нож
Voc.	коњу	ножу
Inst.	коњем	ножем
Loc.	коњу	ножу
Pl. Nom.	коњи	ножеви
Gen.	коња	ножева
Dat.	коњима	ножевима
Acc.	коње	ножеве
Voc.	коњи	ножеви
Inst.	коњима	ножевима
Loc.	коњима	ножевима

B. Examples of hard stems : прозор = *window*, син = *son*

Sing. Nom.	прозор	син
Gen.	прозора	сина
Dat.	прозору	сину
Acc.	прозор	сина
Voc.	прозоре	сине
Inst.	прозором	сином
Loc.	прозору	сину

Pl. Nom.	прѣзори	сѣнови
Gen.	прѣзѣрѣ	синѣвѣ
Dat.	прѣзорима	синѣвима
Acc.	прѣзоре	сѣнове
Voc.	прѣзори	сѣнови
Inst.	прѣзорима	синѣвима
Loc.	прѣзорима	синѣвима

The insertion of the syllable -ов- or -ев- in the plural of the masculine nouns occurs most frequently in nouns of one syllable,<sup>1</sup> but no absolute rule can be given ; sometimes its use is optional, e.g. вѣци (cf. p. 18) or вѣкови = *the wolves*, but N.B. only вѣкѣвѣ = gen. pl.

The differences in the declension of nouns with soft and of those with hard stems are : (1) in the singular, those with soft stems have in the vocative -y instead of -e, and in the instrumental -ем instead of -ом ; (2) in the plural, the monosyllabic nouns with soft stems have in the nominative -ев instead of -ов.

Masculine nouns ending in the nom. sing. in -о and -е have the same inflections, e.g. сѣко (stem : сокол-, cf. p. 16) = *falcon*, Пѣвѣ = *Paul*, Мѣрко = *Mark*.

Sing. Nom.	сѣко	Pl. сѣколи or сѣколови
Gen.	сѣкола	сѣкѣлѣ or соколѣвѣ
Dat.	сѣколу	сѣколима or соколѣвима
Acc.	сѣкола	сѣколе or сѣколове
Voc.	сѣколе	сѣколи or сѣколови
Inst.	сѣколом	сѣколима or соколѣвима
Loc.	сѣколу	сѣколима or соколѣвима

<sup>1</sup> This inserted syllable is a relic of an old declension which is now lost, and is an intruder in most of the words in which it now occurs.

Nom.	Павле	Марко
Gen.	Павла	Марка
Dat.	Павлу	Марку
Acc.	Павла	Марка
Voc.	Павле	Марко
Inst.	Павлом	Марком
Loc.	Павлу	Марку

Nouns denoting nationality, citizenship, religion, or profession, ending in the nom. sing. in -ин, lose н in the plural and are then declined like *про́зори*, e.g.

Nom. Sing.	Србин = <i>a Serbian (m.)</i>	Nom. Pl.	Срби.
„ „	Београђанин = <i>a native of Belgrade (m.)</i>	„ „	Београђани
„ „	бёрберин = <i>barber</i>	„ „	бёрбери.
„ „	хришћанин = <i>Christian</i>	„ „	хришћани

Nouns in -ац lose the а after the nom. sing., e.g. *Не́мац* = *a German (m.)*, nom. pl. *Не́мци*, cf. p. 16.

## II. Declension

(FEMININE, AND MASCULINE NOUNS IN -а)

In this declension the same distinction is made between *soft* and *hard* stems as in the first, but there are no differences in declension.

A. Example of a soft stem : *ду́ша* = *soul*.

Sing. Nom.	ду́ша	ду́ше
Gen.	ду́ше	ду́шā
Dat.	ду́ши	ду́шама
Acc.	ду́шу	ду́ше
Voc.	ду́шо	ду́ше
Inst.	ду́шом	ду́шама
Loc.	ду́ши	ду́шама

B. Example of a hard stem : жѐна = *woman*.

Sing. Nom.	жѐна	жѐне
Gen.	жѐне	жѐнā
Dat.	жѐни	жѐнама
Acc.	жѐну	жѐне
Voc.	жѐно	жѐне
Inst.	жѐнѡм	жѐнама
Loc.	жѐни	жѐнама

Feminine nouns in -ица, such as гѣспођица = *young lady*, Miss, домāкица = *hostess, matron* (masc. домāкин), have in the voc. sing. е, e.g. гѣспођице, домāкице.

What has been said on p. 16 explains such forms as, e.g. nom. sing. дѣвојка = *girl* (stem девојк-), gen. pl. дѣвојкā ; nom. sing. ѡвца = *a sheep* (stem овц-), gen. pl. ѡвāцā.

Sometimes the ending a in the gen. pl. is replaced by и, on the analogy of the declension of ствāр (cf. p. 48), e.g. nom. sing. бѡрба = *fighting* (stem борб-), gen. pl. борбѡи ; nom. sing. мѡлба = *petition* (stem молб-), gen. pl. мѡлбѡи.

The nouns нѡга and рѹка have gen. *dual*: нѡгѹ and рѹкѹ, cf. p. 40.

Masculine nouns in -а are declined like жѐна and дѹша.

In the dative and locative sing. of this declension the gutturals к, г, х, do not always change to ц, з, с, before и, cf. p. 18. When they occur in the groups тк, чк, and зг, and also in proper names, they remain unchanged, e.g.

Nom. Sing.	тѣтка = <i>aunt</i>	Dat. тѣтки (not тетци)
„ „	мāзга = <i>mule</i>	„ мāзги (not маззи)
„ „	мāчка = <i>cat</i>	„ мāчки (not мачци)
„ „	Лѹка = <i>Luke</i>	„ Лѹки (not Луци)
„ „	сѣка = <i>sister</i> (dim.)	„ сѣки (not сеци)

Masculine nouns in -a, e.g. слуга = *man-servant*, though declined throughout like feminine nouns, are looked upon in the sing. as masculine, but in the pl. as feminine, e.g. овѣј слуга је дѡбар = *this man-servant is good*, but овѣ слуге су дѡбре = *these men-servants are good*.

Feminine nouns which end in the nom. sing. in a *consonant* have the following inflections, e.g. ствѡр = *thing* :

Sing. Nom.	ствѡр	ствѡри
Gen.	ствѡри	ствѡрї
Dat.	ствѡри	ствѡрима
Acc.	ствѡр	ствѡри
Voc.	ствѡри	ствѡри
Inst.	ствѡри (or ствѡрїу)	ствѡрима
Loc.	ствѡри	ствѡрима

The two irregular nouns, мѡти (stem : матер-) = *mother*, and кѡї (stem : кѡеп-) = *daughter*, are declined as follows :

Sing. Nom.	мѡти	мѡтере
Gen.	мѡтере	мѡтѣрѡ
Dat.	мѡтери	мѡтерама
Acc.	мѡтер	мѡтере
Voc.	мѡти	мѡтере
Inst.	мѡтером	мѡтерама
Loc.	мѡтери	мѡтерама
Sing. Nom.	кѡї	кѡѣри
Gen.	кѡѣри	кѡѣрї
Dat.	кѡѣри	кѡѣрима
Acc.	кѡѣр	кѡѣри
Voc.	кѡѣри	кѡѣри
Inst.	кѡѣри (or -їу)	кѡѣрима
Loc.	кѡѣри	кѡѣрима

## III. Declension

## (NEUTER NOUNS)

In this declension also the same distinction is made between *soft* and *hard* stems as in the other two, and the differences in the declension of the two kinds of stems are the same as in the case of the masculine nouns (cf. p. 45).

A. Example of a soft stem : пѡѡе = *field*.

Sing. Nom.	пѡѡе	Pl. пѡѡа
Gen.	пѡѡа	пѡѡѡ
Dat.	пѡѡу	пѡѡѡма
Acc.	пѡѡе	пѡѡа
Voc.	пѡѡе	пѡѡа
Inst.	пѡѡем	пѡѡѡма
Loc.	пѡѡу	пѡѡѡма

B. Example of a hard stem : сѣло = *village*.

Sing. Nom.	сѣло	Pl. сѣла
Gen.	сѣла	сѣлѡ
Dat.	сѣлу	сѣлѡма
Acc.	сѣло	сѣла
Voc.	сѣло	сѣла
Inst.	сѣлом	сѣлѡма
Loc.	сѣлу	сѣлѡма

The neuter nouns ѡко = *eye*, ѡво (or ѡхо) = *ear*, плѣче = *shoulder*, are declined in the sing. exactly like the above examples, but in the pl. they have preserved the old *dual* forms for nom. acc. voc. : ѡчи, gen. ѡчијѡ, dat. inst. loc. ѡчѡма = *eyes*, ѡши, ѡшијѡ, ѡшиѡма = *ears*, but плѣћи (nom. acc. voc.), плѣћѡ or плѣћѡ (gen.), and плѣћѡма (dat. inst. loc.) = *shoulders*, and rank as feminine nouns ending in a consonant like ствѡри, cf. p. 48, e.g. ѡве ѡчи = *these eyes*, ѡве ѡши = *these ears*, ѡве плѣћи = *these shoulders*.

A number of neuter nouns insert in all the cases except the nom. acc. and voc. sing. the syllables -ен- or -ет-. Examples : плѣме (stem : племен-<sup>1</sup>) = *tribe*, дѹгме (stem : дугмет-) = *button*.

Sing. Nom.	плѣме	Pl.	племѣна
Gen.	плѣмена		племѣнѧ
Dat.	плѣмену		племѣнѣма
Acc.	плѣме		племѣна
Voc.	плѣме		племѣна
Inst.	плѣменом		племѣнѣма
Loc.	плѣмену		племѣнѣма
Sing. Nom.	дѹгме	Pl.	дугмѣта
Gen.	дѹгмета		дугмѣтѧ
Dat.	дѹгмету		дугмѣтѣма
Acc.	дѹгме		дугмѣта
Voc.	дѹгме		дугмѣта
Inst.	дѹгметом		дугмѣтѣма
Loc.	дѹгмету		дугмѣтѣма

The neuter nouns нѣбо = *sky, heaven*, чѹдо<sup>2</sup> = *marvel*, and тѣло = *body*, are declined as follows :

Sing. Nom.	нѣбо	Pl.	небѣса
Gen.	нѣба		небѣсѧ
Dat.	нѣбу		небѣсѣма
Acc.	нѣбо		небѣса
Voc.	нѣбо		небѣса
Inst.	нѣбом		небѣсѣма
Loc.	нѣбу		небѣсѣма

<sup>1</sup> These nouns all originally belonged to different declensions (cf. *nomen, nominis* in Latin), but have now become assimilated in the nom. sing. with the other neuter nouns.

<sup>2</sup> From which are derived чѹдити се (Class V, 1) = *to be surprised, astonished*, and чѹдноват = *extraordinary*.



## CHAPTER 5

## Reading Exercise

(For the words cf. also the Vocabulary, pp. 26 ff.)

1. Месар<sup>1</sup> (ог касапин<sup>1</sup>) прѡдѡје<sup>2</sup> месо : гѡвеђе<sup>3</sup> (i.e. месо) ог гѡвеђину,<sup>3</sup> телеће<sup>4</sup> ог телетину,<sup>4</sup> јѡгњеће<sup>5</sup> ог јѡгњетину,<sup>5</sup> ѡвчије<sup>6</sup> ог ѡвчетину,<sup>6</sup> свињско<sup>7</sup> ог свињетину.<sup>7</sup> 2. Он прѡдѡје кобасице,<sup>8</sup> шунке,<sup>9</sup> сѹво<sup>10</sup> месо (ог пѡстрму<sup>10</sup>), маѡт,<sup>11</sup> сѡло,<sup>12</sup> сланину.<sup>13</sup> 3. Бакалини<sup>14</sup> прѡдѡје шећер,<sup>15</sup> кѡву<sup>16</sup> (ог кѡфу), чѡј, брашно, сѡ,<sup>17</sup> ѹље<sup>18</sup> (ог зейтин<sup>18</sup>), сирће,<sup>19</sup> шпиритус<sup>20</sup> бибер,<sup>21</sup> пиринач,<sup>22</sup> криз,<sup>23</sup> бадем,<sup>24</sup> какао,<sup>25</sup> чоколаду,<sup>26</sup> макарѡне,<sup>27</sup> ананасе,<sup>28</sup> сѹво грѡжђе,<sup>29</sup> сѹву рибѹ,<sup>30</sup> ѡјвар.<sup>31</sup> 4. Баштѡван<sup>32</sup> ог пѡљѡр<sup>32</sup> прѡдѡје пѡврће<sup>33</sup> (ог зелѡн<sup>33</sup>): крѡмпир,<sup>34</sup> кѹпус,<sup>35</sup> спѡнаћ,<sup>36</sup> кѡљ,<sup>37</sup> пѡсѹљ,<sup>38</sup> ѡѡ,<sup>39</sup> сѡѡиво,<sup>40</sup> грашак,<sup>41</sup> борѡнију,<sup>42</sup> салѡту,<sup>43</sup> крѡставце,<sup>44</sup> патлиѡѡне,<sup>45</sup> тѡкве,<sup>46</sup> шпѡргле,<sup>47</sup> лѹк,<sup>48</sup> келераѡу,<sup>49</sup> рѡткве,<sup>50</sup> цвѡкле,<sup>51</sup> цѡлер,<sup>52</sup> шаргарѡпу,<sup>53</sup> пѡприку,<sup>54</sup> пѡршун,<sup>55</sup> рѡн.<sup>56</sup> 5. Он прѡдѡје вѡће : јѡбуке,<sup>57</sup> крѹшке,<sup>58</sup> шљиве,<sup>59</sup> трѡшње,<sup>60</sup> вишње,<sup>61</sup> јѡгоде,<sup>62</sup> кѡјсије,<sup>63</sup> брѡскве,<sup>64</sup> лубѡнице,<sup>65</sup> дѡње,<sup>66</sup> грѡжђе,<sup>67</sup> ѡрахе,<sup>68</sup> лѡшњиѡе,<sup>69</sup> рибизле,<sup>70</sup> мѡлине,<sup>71</sup> ѡгрѡзд,<sup>72</sup> смѡкве,<sup>73</sup> банѡне,<sup>74</sup> помѡранѡе,<sup>75</sup> лѡмунове.<sup>76</sup> 6. Он прѡдѡје жѡто :<sup>77</sup> шпѡеницу,<sup>78</sup> кукѹруз,<sup>79</sup> јѡчѡм,<sup>80</sup> зѡѡ<sup>81</sup> (ог ѡвѡ). 7. Он прѡдѡје сир, кѡјмаѡ,<sup>82</sup> маѡло (ог пѹтер<sup>83</sup>) јѡја и живѡну<sup>84</sup>: пѡлиѡе,<sup>85</sup> кѡкѡшке,<sup>86</sup> пѡтлѡве,<sup>87</sup> гѹске,<sup>88</sup> плѡвке,<sup>89</sup> кѹрке,<sup>90</sup> јѡребице,<sup>91</sup> прѡпѡлице.<sup>92</sup> 8. Обѹћѡр<sup>93</sup> прѡѡи<sup>94</sup> и прѡдѡје ѡбућѹ<sup>95</sup> : дѹбоѡе<sup>96</sup> цѡпѡле,<sup>96</sup> плѡтке<sup>97</sup> цѡпѡле,<sup>97</sup> чѡзме,<sup>98</sup> пѡпуче,<sup>99</sup> кѡљѡче.<sup>100</sup> 9. Он прѡдѡје маѡт за црне<sup>101</sup> цѡпѡле, за жѹте<sup>102</sup> цѡпѡле, пѡнтљѡѡе<sup>103</sup> за цѡпѡле, дугмѡѡа<sup>104</sup> за цѡпѡле. 10. Крѡјѡѡ<sup>105</sup> прѡѡи и прѡдѡје ѡѡѡо : кѡпѹт, прѡслук, пѡнтѡлѡне, зѡмски,<sup>106</sup> кѡпѹт,

лётњи<sup>107</sup> капут, јахаћ<sup>108</sup> панталоне,<sup>108</sup> обично<sup>109</sup> одело, жакет,<sup>110</sup> смокинг,<sup>111</sup> фрак.<sup>112</sup> 11. Кројачица<sup>113</sup> прави женске<sup>114</sup> хаљине (ог женско одело): костиме,<sup>115</sup> сукње, блузе, огртаче.<sup>116</sup> 12. Столар<sup>117</sup> прави кревете, столице, столове (ог астале) клупе, ормáne,<sup>118</sup> полице,<sup>119</sup> врата, прозоре, сандуке, лествице (ог стубе). 13. Гостиничар<sup>120</sup> (ог кафеџија ог механџија) продaje пиће<sup>121</sup>: пиво, вино, ракију,<sup>122</sup> коњак,<sup>123</sup> рум,<sup>124</sup> каву,<sup>16</sup> соду,<sup>125</sup> лимунaду,<sup>126</sup> малину,<sup>127</sup> минералне<sup>128</sup> воде. 14. Хотелијер<sup>129</sup> држи<sup>130</sup> хотел и ресторaн за доручак,<sup>131</sup> ручак,<sup>132</sup> ужину<sup>133</sup> и вечеру.<sup>134</sup> Он издaje<sup>135</sup> собе на првом<sup>136</sup> спрату,<sup>137</sup> на другом<sup>138</sup> спрату, на трећем<sup>139</sup> спрату. 15. Хотел има вратара<sup>140</sup> (ог портира), келнере,<sup>141</sup> момке<sup>142</sup> (ог слуге), служавке<sup>143</sup> (ог слушкиње), купатила,<sup>144</sup> нужнике,<sup>145</sup> билијаре,<sup>146</sup> карте,<sup>147</sup> доmine,<sup>148</sup> шах.<sup>149</sup> 16. У галантерейској<sup>150</sup> радњи<sup>151</sup> продaje се рубље<sup>152</sup> (ог веш): кошуље, подкошуље,<sup>153</sup> гаће; чарапе, крагне, машине,<sup>154</sup> пешџири,<sup>155</sup> рукавице, манжетне, пешџири, мараме, мѝрѝси.<sup>156</sup> 17. Гвождѝар<sup>157</sup> продaje гвождѝе, челик,<sup>158</sup> бакар,<sup>159</sup> браве,<sup>160</sup> кључеве,<sup>161</sup> револвѝре,<sup>162</sup> пушке,<sup>163</sup> машинѝе<sup>164</sup>: за каву,<sup>165</sup> за брахе,<sup>166</sup> за мѝсо,<sup>167</sup> &c.; ланце,<sup>168</sup> лопате,<sup>169</sup> мотике,<sup>170</sup> ашове,<sup>171</sup> секире,<sup>172</sup> потковице,<sup>173</sup> ексерѝе,<sup>174</sup> чекиѝе,<sup>175</sup> шѝне,<sup>176</sup> фѝдѝре.<sup>177</sup> 18. Седлар<sup>178</sup> продaje: седла,<sup>179</sup> аmove,<sup>180</sup> узде<sup>181</sup> кожу,<sup>182</sup> каише,<sup>183</sup> бичеве.<sup>184</sup> 19. Кдлар<sup>185</sup> прави и продaje кола: обична (ог прѝста) кола, таљигѝе,<sup>186</sup> тѝретна<sup>187</sup> кола, двоколицѝе<sup>188</sup> (ог чѝзе), фијакѝере<sup>189</sup>; самаре.<sup>190</sup> 20. Гдѝ је жељезничка<sup>191</sup> стaница<sup>191</sup>? Гдѝ је паробродска<sup>192</sup> стaница<sup>192</sup>?

<sup>1</sup> butcher. <sup>2</sup> sells (present of продавати, cf. p. 127). <sup>3</sup> beef. <sup>4</sup> veal. <sup>5</sup> lamb. <sup>6</sup> mutton. <sup>7</sup> pork. <sup>8</sup> sausages. <sup>9</sup> ham. <sup>10</sup> dried smoked meat. <sup>11</sup> fat, lard. <sup>12</sup> suet. <sup>13</sup> smoked bacon. <sup>14</sup> grocer. <sup>15</sup> sugar. <sup>16</sup> coffee. <sup>17</sup> salt. <sup>18</sup> oil. <sup>19</sup> vinegar. <sup>20</sup> methyated. <sup>21</sup> pepper. <sup>22</sup> rice. <sup>23</sup> groats. <sup>24</sup> almond.

25 cocoa. 26 chocolate. 27 macaroni. 28 pine-apple. 29 raisins.  
 30 salt fish. 31 caviar. 32 fruiterer. 33 vegetables. 34 potatoes.  
 35 cabbages. 36 spinach. 37 kale. 38 haricot beans. 39 broad  
 beans. 40 lentils. 41 peas. 42 kidney beans, scarlet runner = *French  
 beans*. 43 salad. 44 cucumber. 45 tomatoes (црвенй or red;  
 плави (blue) п. are *aubergine* or *egg-plant*). 46 marrow or pump-  
 kin. 47 asparagus. 48 onion (црнй or black; N.B. бѣлй (white)  
 л. = *garlic*; прѣзйплук = *leeks*). 49 colrabi. 50 radish. 51 beetroot.  
 52 celery. 53 carrots. 54 paprika. 55 parsley. 56 horse-radish.  
 57 apples. 58 pears. 59 plums. 60 sweet cherries. 61 sour cherries.  
 62 strawberries. 63 apricots. 64 peaches. 65 water-melons.  
 66 sweet-melons. 67 grapes. 68 walnuts. 69 hazel-nuts. 70 red  
 currants. 71 raspberries. 72 gooseberries. 73 figs. 74 bananas.  
 75 oranges. 76 lemons. 77 corn (cereals in general). 78 wheat.  
 79 maize. 80 barley. 81 oats. 82 cream. 83 butter. 84 poultry, fowls.  
 85 chickens. 86 hens. 87 cocks. 88 geese. 89 ducks. 90 turkeys.  
 91 partridge. 92 quails. 93 shoemaker. 94 makes. 95 boots and  
 shoes. 96 boots. 97 shoes. 98 top-boots. 99 slippers. 100 galoshes.  
 101 black. 102 yellow. 103 laces. 104 buttons. 105 tailor.  
 106 winter-. 107 summer-. 108 riding-breeches. 109 ordinary,  
 every-day. 110 morning-coat (long). 111 dinner-jacket.  
 112 evening dress. 113 ladies' tailor, dressmaker. 114 women's.  
 115 costumes. 116 mantle. 117 carpenter. 118 cupboard.  
 119 shelves. 120 restaurant-keeper. 121 beverage. 122 brandy,  
 especially of plums, also called шлйвовица. 123 cognac.  
 124 rum. 125 soda-water. 126 lemonade. 127 raspberry-syrup.  
 128 mineral waters. 129 hotel-keeper. 130 keeps. 131 breakfast.  
 132 lunch (or dinner in the middle of the day). 133 tea. 134 supper  
 (or dinner in the evening). 135 lets. 136 first. 137 floor or story.  
 138 second. 139 third. 140 concierge. 141 waiter. 142 man-  
 servant. 143 maid(-servant). 144 bath-room. 145 lavatory, W.C.  
 146 billiard-table. 147 playing-cards. 148 dominoes. 149 chess.  
 150 hosier's, haberdasher's, and milliner's. 151 shop (or дукан).  
 152 linen (underlinen). 153 vests. 154 ties. 155 hats. 156 scents.  
 157 ironmonger. 158 steel. 159 copper (N.B. brass is мѣсинг).  
 160 lock. 161 key. 162 revolver. 163 rifle. 164 machine (N.B.  
 машина is also now always used for matches, though жйжица  
 is the proper word; a box of matches is кутйа машинѣ).

<sup>165</sup> coffee-machine. <sup>166</sup> machine for grinding nuts. <sup>167</sup> mincing-machine. <sup>168</sup> chains. <sup>169</sup> shovel. <sup>170</sup> hoe. <sup>171</sup> spade. <sup>172</sup> axe. <sup>173</sup> horse-shoe. <sup>174</sup> nail. <sup>175</sup> hammer. <sup>176</sup> tyre. <sup>177</sup> spring. <sup>178</sup> saddler. <sup>179</sup> saddles. <sup>180</sup> harness. <sup>181</sup> bit, bridle. <sup>182</sup> leather. <sup>183</sup> strap. <sup>184</sup> whip. <sup>185</sup> carriage-maker, wheelwright. <sup>186</sup> single-horse carriage. <sup>187</sup> waggon, cart. <sup>188</sup> two-wheeled cart. <sup>189</sup> cab. <sup>190</sup> wooden donkey-saddle. <sup>191</sup> railway-station. <sup>192</sup> steamer-station.

## CHAPTER 6

PERSONAL AND DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS AND  
THE USE OF THE PRESENT TENSE OF *TO BE*

I. The Personal Pronouns are declined as follows :

	1st person.	2nd person.	3rd person.		
Sing.			Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
Nom.	jā	tī	ōn	ōna	ōno
Gen.	mēne, me	tēbe, te	hēga, ga	hē, je	hēga, ga
Dat.	mēni, mi	tēbi, ti	hēmu, mu	hōj, joj	hēmu, mu
Acc.	mēne, me	tēbe, te	hēga, ga	hū, ju, je	hēga, ga
Voc.	—	tī	—	—	—
Inst.	mhōm	tōbom	hīm(e)	hōm	hīm
Loc.	mēni	tēbi	hēmu, mu	hōj	hēmu, mu

Pl.					
Nom.	mī	vī	ōni	ōne	ōna
Gen.	hās	vās		hīx, ix	
Dat.	hāma (or hām)	vāma (or vām)		hīma, im	
Acc.	hās	vās		hīx, ix	
Voc.	—	vī		—	
Inst.	hāma	vāma		hīma	
Loc.	hāma	vāma		hīma	

**Note on the short forms of the Personal Pronouns.**

The long forms of these pronouns, e.g. мене, тебе, are used when they are emphasized, especially at the beginning of a sentence, e.g. *Њега сам видео а нê тебе = it was he whom I saw, not thou*; also usually when governed by prepositions, especially those of one syllable, e.g. *уз мене = close to me*; but when, as often happens, such prepositions appear in disyllabic form, then the short form can be used, e.g. *Њзã ме*. The acc. sing. of он occasionally appears in the contracted form њ, e.g. after such prepositions as за, на, у, e.g. *на њ = on to him*. The commonest form of the acc. sing. of она is је; ју is only used when the meaning would be doubtful, e.g. *он ју је пољубио = he kissed her (not је је)*. N.B. the acc. sing. of оно is the same as the gen. sing., not like the nom. sing. cf. pp. 37, 56.

The reflexive pronoun is declined thus :

Nom.	—
Gen.	себе. <sup>1</sup>
Dat.	себи.
Acc.	себе, се.
Voc.	—
Inst.	себѣм.
Loc.	себи.

**II. The Demonstrative Pronouns are :**

Sing. *овãј (m.), овã (f.), овѡ (n.) = this*.

Pl. *овѣ, ѡве, овã = these*.

Sing. *тај, та, тѡ = that*.

Pl. *тѣ, тѣ, та = those*.

<sup>1</sup> This pronoun can be used of any person in either number, but must always refer directly to the subject of the sentence; it can mean : *myself, thyself, himself, herself, itself, ourselves, yourselves, or themselves*; it has no nominative or vocative.

Sing. ònāj, ònā, ònō = *that* (*yonder*).

Pl. ònī, ònē, ònā = *those* (*yonder*).

These are the complete forms of the demonstrative pronouns mentioned on p. 25; they are declined as follows:

N.	òvāj	òvā	òvō	tāj	tā	tō
G.	òvogā (or òvog) <sup>1</sup>	òvē	òvogā (or òvog) <sup>1</sup>	tōga (or tōg) <sup>1</sup>	tē	tōga (or tōg) <sup>1</sup>
D.	òvomē (or òvom) <sup>1</sup>	òvōj	òvomē (or òvom) <sup>1</sup>	tōme (or tōm) <sup>1</sup>	tōj	tōme (or tōm) <sup>1</sup>
A.	òvāj (or òvoga) <sup>2</sup>	òvū	òvo	tāj (tōga) <sup>2</sup>	tū	tō
V.	—	—	—	—	—	—
I.	òvīm	òvōm	òvim	tīm	tōm	tīm
L.	òvomē (or òvom) <sup>1</sup>	òvōj	òvomē (or òvom) <sup>1</sup>	tōme (or tōm) <sup>1</sup>	tōj	tōme (or tōm) <sup>1</sup>

N.	òvī	òvē	òvā	ti	tē	tā
G.	òvīx	òvīx	òvīx	tiX	tiX	tiX
D.	òvima <sup>3</sup>	òvima <sup>3</sup>	òvima <sup>3</sup>	tīma <sup>3</sup>	tīma <sup>3</sup>	tīma <sup>3</sup>
A.	òvē	òvē	òvā	tē	tē	tā
V.	—	—	—	—	—	—
I.	òvima <sup>3</sup>	òvima <sup>3</sup>	òvima <sup>3</sup>	tīma <sup>3</sup>	tīma <sup>3</sup>	tīma <sup>3</sup>
L.	òvima <sup>3</sup>	òvima <sup>3</sup>	òvima <sup>3</sup>	tīma <sup>3</sup>	tīma <sup>3</sup>	tīma <sup>3</sup>

ònāj is declined like òvāj.

### Vocabulary

студент (*m.*) = *student*  
 профессор (*m.*) = *professor*,  
*master of a secondary school*  
 ђак (*m.*) = *schoolboy*  
 ученик (*m.*) = *schoolboy*  
 ученица (*f.*) = *schoolgirl*

учитељ (*m.*) = *man teacher*  
 учитељица (*f.*) = *a woman teacher*  
 човек (*m.*) = *man*  
 људи (*m. pl.*) = *men, people*  
 мљж (*m.*) = *husband*

<sup>1</sup> Cf. p. 65, note 1.

<sup>2</sup> The acc. sing. masc. varies according to the rule given on p. 37, note 2, and on p. 65, note 2.

<sup>3</sup> Colloquially, but also in literature, especially when there are several consecutive words with the same ending, this final vowel is omitted.

жѣна (*f.*) = *woman, wife*  
 ђтац (*m.*) = *father*  
 мајка (or маѣи) (*f.*) = *mother*  
 дете (*n.*) = *child*  
 дѣца (*f. coll. sing.*) = *children*  
 брѣт (*m.*) = *brother*  
 брѣѣа (*f. coll. sing.*) = *brothers*  
 сѣстра (*f.*) = *sister*  
 госпѡдин (*m.*) = *Mr., gentleman*  
 госпѡда (*f. coll. sing.*) = *gentlemen, Messrs.*  
 гѡспођа (*f.*) = *Mrs., lady*  
 гѡспођица (*f.*) = *Miss, young lady*  
 млѡдѣѣ (*m.*) = *young man*  
 рѡдник (*m.*) = *workman*  
 рѡдница (*f.*) = *workwoman*  
 живѡтиѣа (*f.*) = *animal, beast*  
 јѡгње (*n.*) = *lamb*  
 јѡгњѡд (*f. coll. sing.*) = *lambs*  
 пѡс (*m.*) } = *dog*  
 псѣто (*n.*) }  
 Пѣтар = *Peter*

Пѡвѣ = *Paul*  
 Јѡвѡнка = *Jane*  
 Маѣија = *Mary*  
 Америкѡнац (*m.*) = *an American (m.)*  
 Америкѡнка (*f.*) = *an American (f.)*  
 Ёнглѣз (*m.*) = *an Englishman*  
 Ёнглѣскиѣа (*f.*) = *an Englishwoman*  
 Итаѣјѡн <sup>1</sup> (*m.*) = *an Italian (m.)*  
 Итаѣјѡнка <sup>1</sup> (*f.*) = *an Italian (f.)*  
 Нѣмац (*m.*) = *a German (m.)*  
 Нѣмица (*f.*) = *a German (f.)*  
 Рѣс (*m.*) = *a Russian (m.)*  
 Рѣскиѣа (*f.*) = *a Russian (f.)*  
 Срѣбин (*m.*) = *a Serbian (m.)*  
 Срѣпкиѣа (*f.*) = *a Serbian (f.)*  
 Фрѡнцѣз (*m.*) = *a Frenchman*  
 Фрѡнцѣскиѣа (*f.*) = *a Frenchwoman*  
 For conjunctions, cf. p. 189.

# Note

Collective nouns such as дѣца, брѣѣа, госпѡда, corresponding to the nouns дете (*n.*), брѣт (*m.*), госпѡдин (*m.*), and all ending in -ад, such as јѡгњѡд, follow the declension of the singular of the feminine substantives, but the verb with which they are used is in the plural, e.g. ѡвѡј госпѡдин је . . . = *this gentleman is*, or тѡј брѣт је . . . = *that brother is* . . . ; here the pronouns ѡвѡј and тѡј are masc. and the verb is in the sing., but ѡвѡ госпѡда су . . . , or тѡ брѣѣа су . . . = *these gentlemen are* . . . , *those brothers are* . . . ; here the pronouns are fem. sing. and the verb is in the plural.

<sup>1</sup> The initial и is frequently dropped.

## Serbian Sentences

1. Ја сам студент. 2. Ти си дете. 3. Ви сте професор. 4. Шта је онај човек?—Он је учитељ. 5. Ко је она жена?—Она је учитељица. 6. Шта је пећто?—Оно је животиња. 7. Петар и Павле нису професори, они су учитељи. 8. Јованка и Марија нису учитељице, оне су ученице. 9. Шта су пећто и јагње?—Они су животиње. 10. Ми смо студенти. 11. Ви сте деца. 12. Ви сте професори. 13. Ово је перо, то је оловка (ог плајваз), оно је мастило. 14. Ова госпођа и та госпођица су сестре. 15. Ово дете и то су ђаци.<sup>1</sup> 16. Јесу ли ова деца ученици?—Јесу. 17. Ово је Енглџ, то је Францџ, оно је Србин. 18. Ти младићи и они нису браћа. 19. Те госпође су Италијанке, а оне госпођице су Енглџскиње. 20. Ово су Немце. 21. Ове жене су раднице. 22. Ко су ти људи?—Ово су Немци. 23. Ово су Енглџи и Енглџскиње, то су Францџи и Францџскиње, оно су Рџси и Рџскиње. 24. Ови људи су Италијани, ти су Срби, а они су Немци. 25. Јесу ли ово Францџи?—Нису, то су Италијани. 26. Јесу ли ти људи Енглџи? Нису, ово су Америкџци. 27. Ово нису пера, ово су оловке (ог плајвази). 28. Јесте ли ви господин А.?—Нисам, ја сам професор Б. 29. Да ли су она господа Срби?—Јесу. 30. Зар сте ви Енглџ!?—Јесам. 31. Зар нисте ви Енглџскиња!?—Нисам, ја сам Америкџка. 32. Ви сте Српкиња?—Да (јесам).

## Note

Pronouns (and adjectives) referring to two or more neuter nouns in the sing. are put in the masc. pl. (cf. sentence 9 above). But if they refer (1) to neuter nouns in the plural,

<sup>1</sup> Nom. sing. ђак, nom. pl. ђаци, cf. p. 18.



(2) to feminine collective nouns used as the plural of the corresponding masculine or neuter singulars, the pronouns (and adjectives) are put in the neuter pl. or fem. sing., which happen to be the same, e.g.

- |   |                                    |
|---|------------------------------------|
| 1. <i>f. дѣца су . . . the children are . . .</i>                 | } <i>n. она су . . . they are.</i> |
| 2. <i>f. јагњѣд су . . . the lambs are . . .</i>                  |                                    |
| 3. <i>дѣца и јагњѣд су . . . the children and lambs are . . .</i> |                                    |

### English Sentences

1. You are a student.
2. What is he?—He is a professor.
3. What is she?—She is a teacher.
4. Peter is not a teacher, he is a schoolboy.
5. Mary is a schoolgirl.
6. This is a dog.
7. That girl and this woman are not sisters.
8. This child and that are brothers.
9. Who is that man?—He is an Englishman.
10. Who is that lady?—She is a Frenchwoman.
11. Are they (*f.*) work-women?—Yes, they are.
12. Are these men Italian?—No, they are not; they are French.
13. Are you a Serbian (*m.*)?—No, I am not; I am a Russian (*m.*).
14. You are a Serbian (*f.*)?—Yes, I am.
15. Are you not English (*f.*)?—No, I am not; I am American (*f.*).
16. What is this?—That is a pencil.
17. What is that?—This is a pen.
18. Is that a dog?—No, it is not; it is a lamb.
19. Is this ink?—Yes, it is.
20. Who is that young lady?—That is Miss X.
21. Are these children schoolboys?—Yes, they are.

## CHAPTER 7

### THE PAST TENSE OF *TO BE*

THIS is formed by means of the short forms of the present tense of *быти*, followed by the past participle active of the same verb, which is :

Sing. : *м. было, f. была, n. было.*

Pl. : *м. были, f. были, n. были.*

- |          |   |   |
|----------|---|---|
| SINGULAR | { | 1. jâ sam бѣо (бѣла f.) or бѣо (бѣла f.) sam =<br>I have been, I was.   |
|          |   | 2. тѣ си бѣо (бѣла f.) or бѣо (бѣла f.) си = thou<br>has been, thou wast.   |
|          |   | 3. он је бѣо or бѣо је = he has been, he was.<br>она је бѣла or бѣла је = she has been, she was.<br>оно је бѣло or бѣло је = it has been, it was. |
| PLURAL   | { | 1. ми смо бѣли (бѣле f.) or бѣли (бѣле f.) смо<br>= we have been, we were.  |
|          |   | 2. ви сте бѣли (бѣле f.) or бѣли (бѣле f.) сте =<br>you have been, you were.  |
|          |   | 3. они су бѣли or бѣли су } = they have been,<br>оне су бѣле or бѣле су } = they were.<br>она су бѣла or бѣла су }                                |

This tense may have the meaning of either *was* or *have been* in English, e.g.

1. jâ sam бѣо (бѣла f.) or бѣо (бѣла f.) sam jÿтрѣс ŷ  
пољу = I was in the country this morning.
2. бѣо (бѣла f.) sam (or jâ sam бѣо, бѣла f.) jÿчѣ у  
Лондону = I was in London yesterday.
3. бѣо (бѣла f.) sam у Паризу = I have been in Paris.

The interrogative forms are :

- jѣsam ли (jâ) бѣо (бѣла f.) ? or дâ ли sam (jâ) бѣо  
(бѣла f.) ? = Have I been, was I ?
- jѣ ли (он) бѣо ? or дâ ли је (он) бѣо ? = Has he been,  
was he ?
- jѣсте ли (ви) бѣли (бѣле f.) ? or дâ ли сте (ви) бѣли  
(бѣле f.) ? = Have you been, were you ?

Or with зâp, cf. p. 33.

- зâp сте (ви) бѣли (бѣле f.) ? = Have you been, were you ?
- зâp су (оне) бѣле ? = Have they (f.) been, were they (f.) ?

But such questions are also frequently asked in the form of an assumption, cf. p. 33.

The negative forms are :

(jâ) нѣсам бѣо (бѣла f.) = *I have not been, I was not.*

(вѣ) нѣсте бѣли (бѣле f.) = *You have not been, you were not.*

(ѡни) нѣсу бѣли = *They (m.) have not been, they were not.*

The negative-interrogative forms are :

нѣсте ли (вѣ) бѣли (бѣле f.) = *Have you not been, were you not ?*

Or more emphatic forms with зѣп, cf. p. 33.

зѣп нѣсте (вѣ) бѣли (бѣле f.) ? ! = *Have you not been, were you not ? !*

зѣп нѣсу (ѡни) бѣли ? ! = *Have they (m.) not been, were they (m.) not ? !*

зѣп нѣсу (ѡне) бѣле ? ! = *Have they (f.) not been, were they (f.) not ? !*

## CHAPTER 8

### ADJECTIVES (AND ADJECTIVAL ADVERBS)

THE adjective in Serbian has two forms, definite and indefinite. The definite adjectives are only used when reference is made to a particular object ; in all other cases the indefinite adjectives are used. That is to say, the difference between the two is like that between the definite and the indefinite article in English. It is only in the singular of the masculine adjective that a difference of form has survived, e.g.

Indefinite : стѣп<sup>1</sup> чѡвек = *an old man* (cf. *ein alter Mann*).

Definite : стѣри чѡвек = *the old man* (cf. *der alte Mann*).

<sup>1</sup> The word мѣтѡп, *fem.* мѣтѡпа, is also used for *old*, disrespectfully, e.g. of meat which is tough.

In the feminine and neuter nom. sing. and in the whole nom. pl. the difference is only one of the quality of the accent and is hardly noticeable even to Serbians. In general, it may be said that the indefinite form is being gradually superseded by the definite, but the forms are often used inconsistently.

In the sing. the indefinite masc. adjectives end in a consonant or in -o, representing a lost -и (cf. p. 16), the fem. end in -а, the neuter mostly in -о, a few in -е if the stem is soft; in the pl. the masc. end in -и, the fem. in -е, the neut. in -а.

The adjectives may be divided into the following categories: (1) adjectives denoting quality and size, (2) possessive adjectives, and (3) adjectives denoting the material of which things are made, e.g.

1. зѣлен = *green*, дѣбар = *good*, вѣшт = *skilful*, *clever*,  
вѣлики = *big*, *large*, мѣли = *little*, *small*.
2. српски = *Serbian*, енглѣски = *English*, очев = *father's*.
3. гвѣзден = *iron*, свѣлен = *silk*, златан = *golden*.

The adjectives denoting quality, size, and material may be used either in the *indefinite* or in the *definite* form, with certain exceptions: the adjectives вѣлики = *big*, *large*, мѣли = *little*, *small*, as well as a large number derived from expressions of time, e.g. данашњи = *of to-day* (from данас = *to-day*), вѣчѣрњи = *evening* (from вѣче or вѣчер = *evening*), лѣтњи = *summer* (from лѣто = *summer*), are used *only* in the definite form; on the other hand, рад = *glad* is used *only* in the indefinite form.

Of the possessive adjectives, those ending in -ов and -ин, e.g. Петров = *Peter's*, сестрин = *sister's*, are *only* used in the indefinite form; those in -ски, e.g. енглѣски = *English*, are *only* used in the definite form (cf. p. 63).

In the nom. sing. of the indefinite forms of the masc.

adjectives, if the stem ends in a group of consonants (except the groups -ст, -шт, -зд, -жд) the letter -а is inserted before the last consonant for the sake of euphony, e.g. ймѹѣан = *well to do*, бѣлѣстан = *ill* (cf. p. 16).

The possessive adjectives are derived from the respective nouns by adding -ов, -ев, or -ин. If the stem is hard -ов is added, if it is soft, -ев. The ending -ин is most frequently added to the stem of the nouns ending in -а. Examples :

госпѡдин = *gentleman, the master*, adj. госпѡдинов = *the master's*.

прѣјатељ = *friend* ,, прѣјатељев = *friend's*.

сѣстра = *sister* ,, сѣстрин = *sister's*.

вѡјвода = *general* <sup>1</sup> ,, вѡјводин = *of the general*.

However, these possessive adjectives must not be confused with those formed with the ending -ски, which have quite different meanings, e.g.

госпѡдин : гѡспѡдскѣй = *lordly*.

прѣјатељ : прѣјатељскѣй = *friendly*.

сѣстра : сѣстринскѣй = *sisterly*.

вѡјвода : вѡјводскѣй = *of a general or like a general* ;  
which can also be used *adverbially*, e.g.

прѣјатељскѣй = *in a friendly way*,

and cf. сѣрпски = *Serbian*, and also *in Serbian*, or *in Serbian fashion*.

Those nouns ending in ап, as ѡвчѣр = *shepherd*, госпѡдѣр = *master*, form the adjective either in ов or ев : овчѣров (ев), госпѡдѣров (ев).

Masculine nouns ending in ц, such as ѡтац = *father*, make their possessive adjectives as follows : ѡчев ; the word кнѣз = *prince*, has кнѣжев. See p. 18.

<sup>1</sup> N.B. генѣрѣл or ѣгенѣрѣл is also used.

Nouns with stems in *к* or *ц*, such as *мāјка* = *mother*, or *Мйлица* = *Milica* (a fem. name), change *к* and *ц* to *ч* before *и*, e.g. *мāјчин*, *Мйличин*. If the stem ends in *г* or *х* it does not change, e.g. *слўга* = *man-servant*, *снāха* = *daughter-in-law* : *слўгин*, *снāхин* or *снāин*.

### Adverbs formed from Adjectives

The neuter form (nom. sing.) of every adjective, except those in category 2, can be used as an adverb, e.g. *дōбро* = *well, very well, all right* ; cf. p. 184.

## CHAPTER 9

### DECLENSION OF ADJECTIVES

THE adjectives are declined as follows :

#### I. Indefinite Adjectives

Example of a hard stem : *жўт*, *жўта*, *жўто* = *yellow*.

Sing. Nom.	жўт	жўта	жўто
Gen.	жўта	жўте	жўта
Dat.	жўту	жўтōј	жўту
Acc.	жўт or жўта <sup>1</sup>	жўту	жўто
Voc.	—	—	—
Inst.	жўтйм	жўтōм	жўтйм
Loc.	жўту	жўтōј	жўту
Pl. Nom.	жўти	жўте	жўта
Gen.	жўтйх	жўтйх	жўтйх
Dat.	жўтйм	жўтйм	жўтйм
Acc.	жўте	жўте	жўта
Voc.	—	—	—
Inst.	жўтйм	жўтйм	жўтйм
Loc.	жўтйм	жўтйм	жўтйм

<sup>1</sup> Cf. note 2 on p. 65.

**Adjectives with soft stems**

Indefinite adjectives with soft stems are declined exactly like those with hard stems except that the nom. and acc. sing. neut. ends in -e, e.g. врѣѣ, врѣѣа, врѣѣе = *hot*.

**II. Definite Adjectives**

Example of a hard stem :

Sing. Nom.	жѣтѣ	жѣтѣ	жѣтѣ
Gen.	жѣтѣга <sup>1</sup>	жѣтѣ	жѣтѣга
Dat.	жѣтѣме <sup>1</sup>	жѣтѣј	жѣтѣме
Acc.	жѣтѣ or жѣтѣгѣ	жѣтѣ	жѣтѣ
Voc.	жѣтѣ	жѣтѣ	жѣтѣ
Inst.	жѣтѣм	жѣтѣм	жѣтѣм
Loc.	жѣтѣме <sup>1</sup>	жѣтѣј	жѣтѣме
Pl. Nom.	жѣтѣ	жѣтѣ	жѣтѣ
Gen.	жѣтѣх	жѣтѣх	жѣтѣх
Dat.	жѣтѣм	жѣтѣм	жѣтѣм
Acc.	жѣтѣ	жѣтѣ	жѣтѣ
Voc.	жѣтѣ	жѣтѣ	жѣтѣ
Inst.	жѣтѣм	жѣтѣм	жѣтѣм
Loc.	жѣтѣм	жѣтѣм	жѣтѣм

**Important notes**

1. There are alternative forms of the gen. and acc. sing. masc. and neut., viz. жѣтѣ instead of жѣтѣга, and of the dat. and loc. sing. masc. and neut., viz. жѣтѣм instead of жѣтѣме, and these shorter forms are now those most generally used. Instead of жѣтѣме the form жѣтѣму is also sometimes to be found.

2. The acc. sing. of the masc. adjectives, both indefinite and definite, is the same as the gen. sing. when it qualifies

<sup>1</sup> Cf. p. 56, foot-note 3.





Sing.	њѐн <sup>1</sup>	њѐна	њѐно	} <i>her.</i>
Pl.	њѐни	њѐне	њѐна	
Sing.	њѝхов	њѝхова	њѝхово	} <i>their</i> (masc. & fem.).
Pl.	њѝхови	њѝхове	њѝхова	

The possessive-reflexive pronoun is :

Sing.	свѭј	свѭја	свѭје	} <i>one's own.</i>
Pl.	свѭји	свѭје	свѭја	

Like the personal-reflexive pronoun this can be used of any of the three persons in either number, but it must always refer directly to the subject of the sentence ; it can mean : *my own, thy own, his own, her own, its own, our own, your own, their own.*

These are declined as follows :

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>
Sing. Nom.	мѭј	мѭја	мѭје
Gen.	мѭга	мѭје	мѭга
Dat.	мѭме	мѭјѭј	мѭме
Acc.	мѭј or мѭга <sup>2</sup>	мѭју	мѭје
Voc.	мѭј	мѭја	мѭје
Inst.	мѭјѝм	мѭјѭм	мѭјѝм
Loc.	мѭме	мѭјѭј	мѭме
Pl. Nom.	мѭји	мѭје	мѭја
Gen.	мѭјѝх	мѭјѝх	мѭјѝх
Dat.	мѭјѝм	мѭјѝм	мѭјѝм
Acc.	мѭје	мѭје	мѭје
Voc.	мѭји	мѭје	мѭје
Inst.	мѭјѝм	мѭјѝм	мѭјѝм
Loc.	мѭјѝм	мѭјѝм	мѭјѝм

твѭј, and the reflexive pronoun свѭј, are declined exactly

<sup>1</sup> Another form of this pronoun is ѝѐзин.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. note 2 on p. 68.

like *môj*, and like the definite adjective with a soft stem (cf. p. 66). The possessive pronouns *нѣм* and *вѣм* are also declined in the same way, but *нѣгов*, *нѣн*, and *нѣхов* are declined like the indefinite adjectives with a hard stem, e.g. *жѣт*, cf. p. 65.

### Important notes

1. There are alternative forms of the gen. and acc. sing. masc. and neut., viz. *môr* instead of *môra*, and of the dat. and loc. sing. masc. and neut., viz. *môm* instead of *môme*, and these shorter forms are very generally used in conversation, though not in literature.

But there are also other fuller forms of these same cases which are sometimes to be met with, viz. gen. *mòjera*, dat. and loc. *mòjemy*. Cf. note 1 on p. 65.

2. The acc. sing. masc. varies in the case of all the possessive pronouns according to the rule given in note 2 on p. 65.

### Vocabulary

рòдители (*m. pl.*) = *parents*  
 сын (*m.*) = *son*  
 кѣй or кѣрка (*f.*) = *daughter*  
 старѣ-мѣйка (*f.*) = *grandmother*  
 дѣда (*m.*) = *grandfather*  
 бѣба (*f.*) = (1) *grandmother*,  
 (2) *old woman*  
 ѣнук (*m.*) = *grandson*  
 стрѣц (*m.*) = *uncle* (father's  
 brother)  
 стрѣна (*f.*) = *aunt* (father's  
 brother's wife)  
 ѣжѣк (*m.*) = *uncle* (mother's  
 brother)  
 ѣжна (*f.*) = *aunt* (mother's  
 brother's wife)  
 тѣча (*m.*) = *uncle* (husband of  
 father's or mother's sister)

тѣтка (*f.*) = *aunt* (father's or  
 mother's sister)  
 брѣт од стрѣца  
 or брѣтучед } = *1st cousin*  
 брѣт од тѣтке } (masc.)  
 брѣт од ѣжѣка }  
 сѣстра од стрѣца } = *1st cousin*  
 сѣстра од тѣтке } (fem.)  
 сѣстра од ѣжѣка }  
 синòвац (*m.*) } = *nephew* (bro-  
 брѣтанац (*m.*) } ther's son)  
 сѣстрик (*m.*) = *nephew* (sister's  
 son)  
 пашѣнози (nom. sing. пашѣ-  
 ног), *m.* = *husbands of two*  
*sisters*  
 свѣкар (*m.*) = *father-in-law*  
 (husband's father)

свѣкрва (*m.*) = *mother-in-law*  
(husband's mother)

тѣст (*m.*) = *father-in-law* (wife's father)

ташта (*f.*) = *mother-in-law*  
(wife's mother)

зѣт (*m.*) = *son-in-law* or *brother-in-law* (daughter's or sister's husband)

шўрѣк (*m.*) = *wife's brother*

шўрѣја (*f.*) = *wife's brother's wife*

снаја, or снаха (*f.*) = *daughter-in-law* or *sister-in-law*

свѣстика (*f.*) = *wife's sister*

зѣова (*f.*) = *husband's sister*

јѣтрва (*f.*) = *husband's brother's wife*

дѣвер (*m.*) = *husband's brother*

пrijатељ (*m.*) = *friend* (*masc.*)

Sing. црн (*m.*), црна<sup>1</sup> (*f.*), црно (*n.*) } = *black*  
Pl. црни (*m.*), црне (*f.*), црна (*n.*) }

Similarly:

лѣп, лѣпа,<sup>1</sup> лѣпо = *beautiful*

жїв, жїва, жїво = *alive*

здрѣв, здрѣва, здрѣво = *healthy, well*

стѣр, стѣра, стѣро = *old*

блѣд, блѣда, блѣдо = *pale*

бѣгат, бѣгата, бѣгато = *rich*

рўмен, рўмена, рўмено = *rosy, red*.<sup>2</sup>

пријатељица (*f.*) = *friend* (*fem.*)

адвѣкат (*m.*) = *barrister* or *solicitor*

Бѣград (*m.*) = *Belgrade*

Лѣндѣн (*m.*) = *London*

Пѣриз (*m.*) = *Paris*

Енглѣска (*f.*) = *England*

Францўска (*f.*) = *France*

кўћа (*f.*) = *house*

сѣло (*n.*) = *village*

брѣг (*m.*) = *hill*

брежўлак (*m.*) = *hillock*

пѣрк (*m.*) = *park*

башта (*f.*) } = *garden*

врѣт (*m.*) }

књїга (*f.*) = *book*

ѣбраз (*m.*) = *cheek* (of face)

шѣтња (*f.*) = *walk*

зѣбава (*f.*) = *entertainment, ball, party*

ѣблѣстан, ѣблѣсна,<sup>3</sup> ѣблѣсно = *ill*

їмўћан, їмўћна,<sup>3</sup> їмўћно = *well to do*

вѣлики, вѣлика, вѣлико = *big, large*

мѣлї, мѣлѣ, мѣло = *little, small*

рѣћенї, рѣћенѣ, рѣћенѣ = *of one's own family*

For prepositions, adverbs, and conjunctions, cf. pp. 151, 179, 189.

<sup>1</sup> N.B. The accent on the neut. sing. and on the masc. fem. neut. pl. usually follows that on the fem. sing.

<sup>2</sup> *red* also = *црвен, црвѣна, црвѣно*.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. p. 16.

## Reading Exercise

1. Мој стриц је био адвокат. 2. Моја тетка је стара жена. 3. Моје дете је било блесно. 4. Моји стричеви су били богати. 5. Моје тетке су врло старе. 6. Моја деца су била блесна. 7. Наш стриц је њућан човек. 8. Наша тетка је била у Енглеској. 9. Наше дете је у парку. 10. Наши стричеви су били у Француској. 11. Наше тетке су биле њућне жене. 12. Наша деца су била у шетњи. 13. Је ли твој отац учитељ?—Није, он је официр. 14. Је ли жива твоја мајка?—Јест.<sup>1</sup> 15. Где је твоје село?—На ономе брегу. 16. Где су твоји родитељи?—У Београду. 17. Јесу ли ово твоје књиге?—Јесу. 18. Јесу ли ово твоја деца?—Нису. 19. Је ли ваш отац здрав?—Није, блестан је. 20. Где је ваша кућа?—У селу. 21. Да ли је ваше село велико?—Није, мало је. 22. Зар нису ваши родитељи у Београду? !—Нису, они су у селу. 23. Зар су ово ваше књиге?—Јесу. 24. Ваша села су на њим брегџима?—Јесу. 25. Његов пријатељ није био у Паризу. 26. Његова пријатељица није учитељица. 27. Његово јагње није било у врту. 28. Његови пријатељи нису били код куће. 29. Његове пријатељице нису биле у Лондону. 30. Његова јагњад нису била у врту. 31. Њен муж није био богат. 32. Њена хаљина није била лепа. 33. Њено лице није бледо. 34. Њени образи нису румени. 35. Њене очи нису црне. 36. Њена деца нису била у школи. 37. Зар њихов пријатељ није био у Лондону? !—Није. 38. Да ли је њихова сестра била учитељица?—Јест.<sup>1</sup> 39. Није ли њихово дете било блесно?—Јест.<sup>1</sup> 40. Њихови родитељи нису били никада богати. 41. Њихове кћери (ог ћерке) нису биле на забави. 42. Њихова деца нису била здрава.

<sup>1</sup> A very colloquial alternative form is *јесте* and *јес*.

## Notes

4. стрѣц (m.)=*uncle*, pl. стрѣцеви (*not* стрицеви). The same with отац (m.)=*father*, pl. очеви; зѣц (m.)=*hare*, pl. зѣчеви, кнѣз (m.)=*prince*, pl. кнѣжеви.

12. бѣти у шѣтъѣ=*to be on a walk*; ѣћи у шѣтъѣ=*to go for a walk*.

25. Many fem. nouns are formed from masc. nouns by means of the ending -ица, e.g. прѣјатељ—пријатељица.

28. код куће=*at home*.

30. Neuter collective nouns ending in -ад, denoting persons or animals, seldom things, are usually derived from the neuter nouns whose stems end in -ет (*gen. sing.*), e.g. јагње (n.)=*gen. sing. јагњета*, *coll. pl. јагњад*, сироче (n.)=*orphan (m. or f.)*, *gen. sing. сирочета*, *coll. pl. сирочад*, &c., cf. p. 50; the *gen.* of these ends in -и, cf. pp. 48, 57.

35. очи = *eyes* are in the *pl.* declined as follows: Nom. Acc. Voc. очи, Gen. очѣјѣ, Dat. Inst. Loc. очима, cf. pp. 49, 50.

41. кћѣри, cf. p. 48 f.

## English Sentences

1. My aunt was rich. 2. My uncles were barristers. 3. My uncle has been in France. 4. My child was not ill. 5. Those are my books. 6. Where are my children?—They are in the park. 7. Where are your aunts?—In Belgrade. 8. Is your mother a teacher?—No, she is not. 9. His father is a teacher. 10. Their village is on that hill (yonder). 11. This is his book. 12. Where is her book? 13. Where are her children? 14. Your parents are in Belgrade?—Yes, they are. 15. Are your parents not in the village<sup>1</sup>?—No, they are not; they are in Belgrade. 16. Are these books yours?—No, they are not. 17. This is the house of my friend. 18. Her lamb was not in the garden. 19. Their friends (m.) were not at home. 20. His friends (f.) are in the country. 21. Her lambs are in the garden. 22. Her husband is ill. 23. Her dress was nice. 24. His cheeks are not rosy, they are pale. 25. Her eyes are dark. 26. Have their children not been at school? 27. Where has her daughter been?—She was at a party. 28. Have

<sup>1</sup> = 'in the country'.

their sisters (ever) been in London ?—No, they have not ; but they have been in Paris. 29. Where were you yesterday (јуче) ?—We were at home. 30. She was very ill yesterday.

### Sentences especially illustrating Serbian relationships

Мој отац и твој су рођена<sup>1</sup> браћа ; њихов отац је наш деда, њихова мајка је наша баба, ми смо њихови унуци. Твој отац је мој стриц, његова жена је моја стрица, ја сам његов синовац, ти си мој брат од стрица, а и ја сам твој ; твоја рођена сестра је моја сестра од стрица, ја сам њен брат од стрица.—Твоја мајка и моја су рођене сестре ; њихова мајка је моја баба (ог стара-мајка), ја сам њен унук. Моја мајка је твоја тетка, њен муж је твој теча, ти си њен сестрић а мој брат од тетке ; моја рођена сестра је твоја сестра од тетке.—Моја мајка и твој отац су рођени брат и сестра ; твој отац је мој ујак, његова жена је моја ујна, ја сам његов сестрић ; моја мајка је твоја тетка, ти си њен братанац ; ти си мој брат од ујака, ја сам твој брат од тетке ; твоја рођена сестра је моја сестра од ујака, а моја рођена сестра је твоја сестра од тетке.—Муж моје сестре је зет мојих родитеља и мој зет ; мој отац је његов тајст, моја мајка је његова ташта, моја сестра је његова свастика, а ја сам његов шурак ; моја жена је његова шурњаја.—Жена мога брата је снаја (ог сна, снаха) мојих родитеља и моја снаја, мој отац је њен свекар, моја мајка је њена свекрва, моја сестра је њена заова, а ја сам њен дјевер.—Моја жена и жена мога брата су узајамно јетрве. Моја жена и жена мога пријатеља су рођене сестре ; он и ја смо пашенози.

<sup>1</sup> рођен, literally=*born*, from родити=*to give birth to a child* (or *to bear fruit*) ; родити се=*to be born*.

## CHAPTER 11

## THE FUTURE TENSE OF TO BE

THE future tense of бѣти = *to be*, like that of every other Serbian verb, is formed by means of the auxiliary verb хтѣти = *to wish, to be willing, to want*. It is formed in two ways, either (1) by the shortened form of the present of this verb followed by an infinitive and preceded by the personal pronouns, in which case it resembles the English *I'll be*, or (2) if the personal pronouns are omitted, by the addition of these shortened forms to the stem of another verb.

The full forms of the present of хтѣти are :

- |                                      |                              |
|--------------------------------------|------------------------------|
| 1. (ја) хѡху = <i>I wish, I will</i> | (ми) хѡхемо = <i>we will</i> |
| 2. (ти) хѡхеш                        | (ви) хѡхете                  |
| 3. (он) хѡхе                         | (они) хѡхѣ                   |
| (она) хѡхе                           | (оне) хѡхѣ                   |
| (оно) хѡхе                           | (она) хѡхѣ                   |

The shortened form which is used in the formation of *any* future consists of the second half of each of these words, viz. ху, хеш, хе, хемо, хете, хе, without accent.

The *first* form of the future of бѣти will therefore be :

ја ху бѣти = $\begin{cases} I \text{ will be} \\ I \text{ shall be} \end{cases}$	ми хемо бѣти = <i>we shall be</i>
ти хеш бѣти = <i>thou wilt be</i>	ви хете бѣти = <i>you will be</i>
он хе бѣти = <i>he will be</i>	они хе бѣти
она хе бѣти = <i>she will be</i>	оне хе бѣти
оно хе бѣти = <i>it will be</i>	она хе бѣти } = <i>they will be</i>

The *second* form :

бѣху = $\begin{cases} I \text{ will be} \\ I \text{ shall be} \end{cases}$	бѣхемо = <i>we shall be</i>
бѣхеш = <i>thou wilt be</i>	бѣхете = <i>you will be</i>
бѣхе = <i>he (she, it) will be</i>	бѣхѣ = <i>they will be</i>

For the *negative* form of the present of *хтѣти* the *short* forms *only* are used, coupled with the negative particle, whether *хтѣти* is used as an independent verb or as an auxiliary, viz.

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| 1. (jâ) нѣху = $\begin{cases} I \text{ will not} \\ I \text{ don't wish} \end{cases}$ | 1. (мѣ) нѣхемо   |
| 2. (тѣ) нѣхеш   | 2. (вѣ) нѣхете   |
| 3. (ѡн, ѡна, ѡно) нѣхе  | 3. $\begin{pmatrix} \text{ѡни} \\ \text{ѡне} \\ \text{ѡна} \end{pmatrix}$ нѣхѣ |

The negative future of *бѣти* is accordingly formed with *нѣху*, and has only the *one* form :

- |   |                  |
|---|------------------|
| 1. (jâ) нѣху бѣти = $\begin{cases} I \text{ will not be} \\ I \text{ shall not be} \end{cases}$ | (мѣ) нѣхемо бѣти |
| 2. (тѣ) нѣхеш бѣти  | (вѣ) нѣхете бѣти |
| 3. (ѡн) нѣхе бѣти   | (ѡни) нѣхѣ бѣти  |
| (ѡна) нѣхе бѣти   | (ѡне) нѣхѣ бѣти  |
| (ѡно) нѣхе бѣти   | (ѡна) нѣхѣ бѣти  |

The negative future of *any* verb is similarly formed.

The *interrogative* form of the present of *хтѣти* is formed thus :

- хѡхеш ли (тѣ) ? = *dost thou wish ?*  
 хѡхете ли (вѣ) ? = *do you wish ?*

The interrogative future of *бѣти* is accordingly formed with this verb as follows, and *only* in the full form :

- хѡхеш ли (тѣ) бѣти ? = *wilt thou be ?*  
 хѡхе ли (ѡн, ѡна, ѡно) бѣти ? = *will (he, she, it) be ?*  
 хѡхете ли (ви) бѣти ? = *will you be ?*  
 хѡхѣ ли (ѡни, ѡне, ѡна) бѣти ? = *will they be ?*

If the personal pronouns are retained they *must* be placed between the interrogative particle and the infinitive, as above.



Emphatic interrogations can be formed with *зәр* (cf. p. 33) and the short forms, e.g.

*зәр һе җн бйти ? = do you mean to say that he will be ?*

*зәр һете вй бйти ? = do you mean to say that you will be ?*

Or with *дә* *ли* (cf. p. 33) and the short forms, e.g.

*дә ли һе (җн, җна, җно) бйти ? = will he be ?*

*дә ли һете (вй) бйти ? = will you be ?*

If negative interrogative forms are required, they are formed as follows :

*неһете ли (вй) бйти ? = won't you be ?*

Or with *зәр*, cf. p. 34.

*зәр неһе (җн, җна, җно) бйти ? = do you mean to say he won't be ?*

*зәр неһете (вй) бйти ? = do you mean to say you won't be ?*

But such questions can also be asked in the form of an assumption by raising the voice, e.g.

*вй һете бйти ? = you will be ?*

The present forms of *хтети* are of course also frequently used in their literal meaning corresponding to the English verbs *to wish, to be willing, to want*. The personal pronouns are used only where special emphasis is laid on them. Examples :

*хдһу вде, хлѐба, кафе = I want some water, bread, coffee.*

Used interrogatively :

*хдһете ли вде ? = will you have some water ?*

*хдһу, мдлйм вас = I will, please (lit. I beg you).*

*хвала, не (or неһу) = thank you, no (I will not).*

The shortened forms are also used sometimes in their literal meaning, e.g.

*кд һе вде ? = who wants some water ? ја һу = I do (lit. I want).*

There is another form of the future, known as the *exact future*, which is used only in subordinate sentences. It is formed by means of the perfective present of бѣти (cf. p. 34) and the past participle active :

- |                        |                          |
|------------------------|--------------------------|
| 1. бѹдѣм бѣо (бѣла f.) | 1. бѹдѣмо бѣли (бѣле f.) |
| 2. бѹдѣш бѣо (бѣла f.) | 2. бѹдѣте бѣли (бѣле f.) |
| 3. бѹдѣ бѣо            | 3. бѹдѹ бѣли             |
| бѹдѣ бѣла              | бѹдѹ бѣле                |
| бѹдѣ бѣло              | бѹдѹ бѣла                |

This tense is not frequently used in the case of the verb бѣти, because in conditional clauses the perfective present бѹдем is quite sufficient alone, e.g.

кад бѹдѣм у Лондону = *when I am* (lit. *shall be*) *in London.*

ако бѹдѣм у Лондону = *if I am* (lit. *shall be*) *in London.*

But in the case of all other verbs it is extremely common, e.g.

кад or ако бѹдѣм дошао<sup>1</sup> у Лондон = *when or if I shall have come to London.*

## CHAPTER 12

### INTERROGATIVE AND RELATIVE PRONOUNS AND THE USE OF THE PRESENT, PAST, AND FUTURE OF TO BE

	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	
Sing.	кòjѣ	кòjā	кòjē	} = <i>who, which</i>
Pl.	кòjѣ	кòjē	кòjā	
Sing.	какав	каква	какво	} = <i>of what sort</i>
Pl.	какви	какве	каква	
	or :			
Sing.	какѣ	кака̄	какò	} = <i>of what sort</i>
Pl.	какѣ	какē	какā	

<sup>1</sup> дошао, past part. of доћи = *to come, to arrive.*

Sing.	колийкй	колийкă	колийкō	} = <i>how big</i>
Pl.	колийкй	колийкē	колийкă	
Sing.	чйјй (or чйј)	чйјă	чйјē	} = <i>whose</i>
Pl.	чйјй	чйјē	чйјă	

кō = *who*, штă or штō = *what*; кōликo, cf. p. 184

All these may be used as interrogative or relative, and also as indefinite pronouns.

They are declined as follows :

Only in the Sing.

Only in the Sing.

N.	кō	штă, штō
G.	кōга	чēга, штă
D.	кōме or кōму	чēму
A.	кōга	штă, штō
V.	—	—
I.	кйм or кйме <sup>1</sup>	чйм or чйме <sup>1</sup>
L.	кōме or кōм <sup>1</sup>	чēму or чēm

Sing. N.	кōјй	кōјă	кōјē
G.	кōјега	кōјē	кōјега
D.	кōјему	кōјōј	кōјему
A.	кōјй or кōјега <sup>2</sup>	кōјŷ	кōјē
V.	—	—	—
I.	кōјйм	кōјōм	кōјйм
L.	кōјēm	кōјōј	кōјēm
Pl. N.	кōјй	кōјē	кōјă
G.	кōјйх	кōјйх	кōјйх
D.	кōјйм or кōјима <sup>3</sup>	кōјйм or кōји- ма <sup>3</sup>	кōјйм or кōји- ма <sup>3</sup>
A.	кōјē	кōјē	кōјă
V.	—	—	—

<sup>1</sup> Cf. notes 1 and 3 on p. 56.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. note 2 on p. 65.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. foot-note 1 on p. 78.

I. кòјѣм ог кòјѣма<sup>1</sup> кòјѣм ог кòји-ма<sup>1</sup> кòјѣм ог кòји-ма<sup>1</sup>

L. кòјѣм ог кòјѣма<sup>1</sup> кòјѣм ог кòји-ма<sup>1</sup> кòјѣм ог кòји-ма<sup>1</sup>

Чѣј—чѣјѧ—чѣјѣ is declined exactly like кòјѣ, and like the definite adjectives with a soft stem, cf. врѣѣ, p. 65.

The pronoun кàкàв is declined exactly like the indefinite adjective, cf. жѣт, p. 64. The form кàкѣ and the pronoun коликѣ are declined like the definite adjective with a hard stem, cf. жѣтѣ, p. 65.

### Vocabulary

шѣма (f.) = *wood*,<sup>2</sup> *forest*  
пѣт (m.) = *road, way, (a) time*  
(једàнпѣт = *once*)  
имàње (n.) = *property (land or fortune)*  
пòзорѣште (n.) = *theatre*  
кòнцерт (m.) = *concert*  
јàбука (f.) = *apple*  
шѣшѣр (m.) = *hat*  
ѣкѣс (m.) = *taste*  
бòја (f.) = *colour*

тòрба (f.) = *handbag, knapsack*  
ствàр (f.) = *thing*  
сѣлàк (m.) = *villager, peasant*  
дѣчкò ог дѣчàк (m.) = *boy*  
дѣвòјка (f.) = *girl*  
зàтвор (m.) = *prison, detention*  
рàт (m.) = *war*  
мѣр (m.) = *peace*  
пòдне (*indeclinable*) = *noon* (cf. p. 155)  
хвàла (f.) = *thanks*

ѣкѣсан (masc.), -сна (fem.), -сно (neut.) = *nice (to taste)*  
нѣпòслѣшан, -шна, -шно = *disobedient*  
нѣуредан, -дна, -дно = *untidy*  
òпàсан, -сна, -сно = *dangerous*

сѣрòтан, -тна, -тно = *poor*  
(opp. to *rich*)  
свѣлен, -ѣна, ѣно = *silken*  
срѣбрн, -рна, -рно = *of silver*

For the prepositions and adverbs cf. pp. 151, 179.

### Serbian Sentences

1. Јà кѣ сѣтра бѣти кòд куѣе, а òн нѣѣ. 2. Гдѣ ѣе òн бѣти?—Ў шуми. 3. Хòѣте ли бѣти дàнàс прѣ пòдне ѣ цркви?—Хòкѣ (хòѣемо). 4. Гдѣ ѣете бѣти дàнàс

<sup>1</sup> Cf. note 3 on p. 56.

<sup>2</sup> *wood*, the material, is дрѣво.

после подне?—Бйћу (ог бйћемо) на рѣци. 5. Хѡћете ли вечѣрас бйти у пѡзорйшту?—Нѣћу (ог нѣћемо), бйћу (ог бйћемо) на кѡнцерту. 6. Зѣр ћете прѣксеутра ѡпѣт бйти на рѣци?!—Хѡћу (ог бйћу). 7. Зѣр (ѡн, ѡна) нѣће бйти јутрѡс у цркви!?!—Нѣће. 8. Хѡћете ли вйна?—Нѣ, хвѣла. 9. Ви нѣћете јѣбукѣ?—Нѣ, хвѣла. 10. Ви нѣћете нйкад(а) бйти мѡј прйјатељ! 11. Чйј(и) је ѡвѣј (ог ѡво) шѣшйр?—Мѡј. 12. Чйјѣ је ѡвѣ (ог ѡво) кукѣ?—Нѣгова. 13. Чйје је ѡвѡ дѣте?—Нѣно. 14. Чйји су ѡвй (ог ѡво) капутй?—Нѣши. 15. Чйје су ѡвѣ (ог ѡво) ствѣри?—Вѣше. 16. Чйја су ѡвѣ (ог ѡво) дѣца?—Нйхова. 17. Кѣкав (ог кѣкй) је вѣш сѣт?—Срѣбрн. 18. Кѣква (ог кѣкѣ) је бйла нѣна хѣлина?—Свилѣна. 19. Кѣкво (ог кѣкѡ) је тѡ вйно?—Врло дѡбро. 20. Колйкй је вѣш сйн?—Вѣлыкй дѣчко (ог дѣчѣк). 21. Колйкѣ је вѣша ћѣрка?—Вѣлыка дѣвѡјка. 22. Колйкѡ је нѣгово имѣње?—Врло мѣло. 23. Кѡлыко сте пѣта бйли у Лонѡну?—Јѣдѣнпѣт. 24. Кѡјѣ је вѣш брѣт?—Ѡнѡ (је). 25. Кѡјѣ је нѣгова сѣстра?—Ѡнѡ (је). 26. Кѡјѣ је нѣно пѣрѡ?—Тѡ (је). 27. Кѡјѣ су вѣши кѡњи?—Ѡвѡ (су). 28. Кѡјѣ су нйхове кнйге?—Ѡнѡ (су). 29. Шѣшйр, кѡјй је на стѡлицй, нйје мѡј. 30. Ѡнѣ гѡспођѣ, кѡјѣ је бйла блйзу вѣс, нйје нѣгова мѣјка. 31. Нѣгово дѣте, кѡјѣ је увѣк нѣпѡслѣшно, бйће дѣнѣс у зѣтвору. 32. Кѡ је ѡнѣј чѡвек?—Тѡ је вѡјнйк кѡјй је бйѡ у рѣту. 33. Штѣ је тѡ?—Ѡвѡ су ствѣри кѡјѣ су бйле у нѣговој тѡрбй. 34. Људй чйјѣ су имѣнѣ вѣлыка нйсу сйротнй. 35. Ђѣцй чйјѣ кнйге нйсу чйсте, нѣурѣднй су. 36. Кѣд сте бйли кѡд куће?—Ѡнѡмѣд у пѡдне. 37. Јѣ ли мѡј брѣт бйѡ кѡд вѣс јучѣ прѣ пѡдне?—Нйје. 38. Зѣр мѡј ѡгѣц нйје бйѡ код нѣга сйноћ?!—Нйје. 39. Прѣкјучѣ сам бйѡ код ѡнога

сељака чија је кућа на брѣгу. 40. Прѣксиноћ нисмо били код куће.

### Notes

5. на кѡнцерту=*at the concert* (lit. *on*).

8. вина, Part. Gen.=*some wine*.

9. јабука, Part. Gen. Pl.=*some apples*.

11-16. The neuter forms ђвѡ, тѡ, ѡнѡ of the demonstrative pronouns ђвāj, тāj, ѡнāj may be used impersonally for all the genders.

37. код вās=*at your home* (lit. *at you*).

38. код њѣга=*at his home*, but с вāма=*with you*, с њīm=*with him*.

### English Sentences

1. We shall not be at church to-morrow. 2. Where will she be to-day? 3. Will they be on the river to-morrow?—No, they will not. 4. The day after to-morrow we shall be in the theatre (=we shall go to). 5. Will you have some apples?—Yes, I will. 6. Whose coat is this?—It is mine. 7. Whose houses are those?—They are ours. 8. Of what sort (=of what colour *or* material) is his coat?—Woollen.<sup>1</sup> 9. How big is her son? 10. How many<sup>2</sup> times were you yesterday in the park? 11. Which is his book?—That is. 12. Which are their horses?—These are. 13. The child who was near you is her son. 14. These things were on my chair. 15. Those boys are not poor; their parents are well off. 16. My brother was not at home. 17. Was this boy not at home?—No, he was not. 18. We were not in the theatre the evening before last. 19. His son is an untidy boy. 20. What sort of church is that? 21. That is my handbag. 22. Whose things are those on the table?—They are mine. 23. After noon (=in the a.) we shall be at home. 24. Before noon (=in the morning) they were not at home. 25. What a pretty colour! 26. Of what colour are his eyes and his hair? 27. The taste of this dish is very pleasant. 28. This dish is very nice (to taste). 29. What large apples! whose are they?

<sup>1</sup> вўнен, from вўна (f.)=*wool*.

<sup>2</sup> кѡлико (*adv.*).

# CHAPTER 13

## THE IMPERATIVE AND THE CONDITIONAL (AND THE AORIST) OF TO BE

### 1. *The Imperative.*

For this, and for all other verbs, special forms exist only for the 2nd pers. sing. and the 1st and 2nd pers. pl. For the 3rd pers. sing. and pl. a paraphrase is used, as in English, with the word *heka* = *let* :

Sing. 1. —	Pl. бѹдимо = <i>let us be</i>
2. бѹди = <i>be (thou)</i>	бѹдите = <i>be (you)</i>
3. heka бѹде = <i>let him,</i> <i>her, it, be</i>	heka бѹду = <i>let them be</i>

The negative is formed by prefixing to these forms *ne*, e.g. *neбуди, neбуди́мо, neбудите.*

2. *The Conditional* of this, and of all other verbs, is formed by means of the past participle active (cf. pp. 59, 148), preceded by the *aorist*<sup>1</sup> of the verb *бѣти*. If the personal pronouns are retained the participle comes first; if they are omitted it comes second. When the personal pronouns are retained the forms of the aorist are not accented.

The forms of the aorist of *бѣти* are :

Sing. 1. (jâ) бѣх	Pl. 1. (mî) бѣсмо
2. (tî) бѣ	2. (vî) бѣсте
3. $\left. \begin{matrix} \text{òн} \\ \text{òна} \\ \text{òно} \end{matrix} \right\} \text{бѣ}$	3. $\left. \begin{matrix} \text{òни} \\ \text{òне} \\ \text{òна} \end{matrix} \right\} \text{бѣше}$

<sup>1</sup> The aorist still exists in Serbian, as well as the imperfect, but these tenses, though very much used in literature, are rare in conversation; the aorist corresponds to the French *passé défini*, and cf. p. 187.

When these forms are used for the conditional the 3rd pers. plur. бѣше changes into бѣ. Even in the 1st and 2nd pers. plur. this shortened form бѣ is most frequently used instead of бѣсмо and бѣсте. The conditional of бѣти therefore is as follows :

Sing. 1. ја бих бѣо (бѣла f.) or бѣо (бѣла) бих = *I should be, or I should have been*

2. ти би бѣо (бѣла f.) ,, бѣо (бѣла) би

3.  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{он би бѣо} \\ \text{она би бѣла} \\ \text{оно би бѣло} \end{array} \right. \quad \begin{array}{l} \text{бѣо би} \\ \text{бѣла би} \\ \text{бѣло би} \end{array}$

Pl. 1. ми би бѣли (бѣле f.) or бѣли (бѣле) би

2. ви би бѣли (бѣле f.) ,, бѣли (бѣле) би

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{они би бѣли} \\ \text{оне би бѣле} \\ \text{она би бѣла} \end{array} \right. \quad \begin{array}{l} \text{бѣли би} \\ \text{бѣле би} \\ \text{бѣла би} \end{array}$

The negative is formed by putting the negative particle не before the auxiliary verb, e.g.

1. ја не бих бѣо or не бих бѣо = *I should not be, or I should not have been*

2. ви не би бѣли ,, не би бѣли

The interrogative of the conditional of бѣти is most frequently used with да ли, e.g.

да ли би (ви) бѣли (бѣле f.) = *would you be ? or would you have been ?*

да ли би (они, оне . . .) бѣли (бѣле f.) = *would they (f.) be (or have been) ?*

Also very often with заp, e.g.

заp би (ви) бѣли ? = *would you be (or have been) ?*

заp би (он) бѣо . . . ? = *would he be (or have been) ?*

Or in the negative-interrogative form :

заp не би бѣла . . . ? = *would she not be ? or would not she have been ?*



за́р не́ би (ѡни) би́ли . . . ? = *would they, &c.*

Such forms as

би́ ли (ви́) би́ли (би́ле *f.*) . . . ?      би́ ли (ѡни) би́ли . . . ?  
sound bad and are not used.

The English phrase *Would it be better* is translated thus :  
да́ ли би́ би́ло бо́ље ? *Would it be possible* = да́ ли би́ би́ло  
могу́ће (or могу́ће) ?

As will have been evident from the examples already given, there is no difference between the future conditional and the past conditional in Serbian,<sup>1</sup> e.g.

Ја́ би́х во́лео (or во́леа) = *I should like* or *I should have liked*.

At the same time in a subordinate clause following such a sentence a difference can be made between the past and the future by the use of different conjunctions, as follows :

1. *I should be glad* (lit. *I should like*) *if you could do this* =  
Ја́ би́х во́лео ка́д (or а́ко) би́ ви́ ђво мо́гли ура́дити.

2. *I should have been glad* (lit. *I should have liked*) *if you could have done this* = Ја́ би́х во́лео да́ сте (ви́) ђво мо́гли ура́дити.

3. *I should go to London to-morrow if I were able* = Їшао би́х су́тра у Ло́ндѡн ка́д (or а́ко) би́х мо́гао (мо́гла).

4. *I should have gone to London yesterday if I had been able* = Їшао би́х ју́че у Ло́ндѡн да́ сам мо́гао.

That is to say, a past conditional clause is rendered by да́ with the ordinary past tense, while a future conditional clause is rendered by ка́д or а́ко with the conditional; in the principal sentence in each case the conditional is used.

<sup>1</sup> Forms such as ја́ би́х би́о во́лео, &c., are obsolete.

## CHAPTER 14

THE COMPARATIVE AND SUPERLATIVE OF  
ADJECTIVES

THE **Comparative** is formed by adding the following endings to the stem of the adjectives :

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>
1. Sing.	-јѣ	-ја	-јѣ
Pl.	-јѣ	-јѣ	-ја
or :			
2. Sing.	-шѣ	-ша	-шѣ
Pl.	-шѣ	-шѣ	-ша
or :			
3. Sing.	-ијѣ	-ија	-ијѣ
Pl.	-ијѣ	-ијѣ	-ија

1. The following adjectives form the comparative by means of the first group of endings, of which the letter *j* coalesces with the last consonant of the adjectival stem (cf. p. 18, IV):

бѣо<sup>1</sup> = *white*, comp. бѣѣи (*m.*), бѣѣа (*f.*), бѣѣѣ (*n.*).

бѣсан = *mad, furious* : бѣшѣи (*m.*), бѣшѣа (*f.*), бѣшѣѣ (*n.*).

блѣг = *mild* : блѣжѣи (*m.*), блѣжѣа (*f.*), блѣжѣѣ (*n.*).

блѣд = *pale* : блѣдѣи (*m.*), блѣдѣа (*f.*), блѣдѣѣ (*n.*).

брѣз = *quick* : брѣжѣи (*m.*), брѣжѣа (*f.*), брѣжѣѣ (*n.*).

врѣх = *hot* : врѣхѣи<sup>2</sup> (*m.*), врѣхѣа<sup>2</sup> (*f.*), врѣхѣѣ<sup>2</sup> (*n.*).

глѣв = *deaf* : глѣвѣи (*m.*), глѣвѣа (*f.*), глѣвѣѣ (*n.*).

гѣрак (stem : гѣрк-) = *bitter* : гѣрчѣи (*m.*), гѣрчѣа (*f.*), гѣрчѣѣ (*n.*).

<sup>1</sup> Originally бел, cf. p. 16.

<sup>2</sup> More commonly тѣплији, comp. of тѣпо = *warm*, and вѣрѣлији, comp. of вѣо = *hot*.

- грѹб = *rough*<sup>1</sup>: грѹбѣи (m.), грѹбѣѧ (f.), грѹбѣѥ (n.).  
 гѹст = *thick*,<sup>2</sup> *dense*: гѹстѣи (m.), гѹстѣѧ (f.), гѹстѣѥ (n.).  
 драг = *dear* (not of price): дражѣи (m.), дражѣѧ (f.),  
 дражѣѥ (n.).  
 дѹг = *long*: дѹжѣи (m.), дѹжѣѧ (f.), дѹжѣѥ (n.).  
 жѣв = *alive, lively*: жѣвѣи (m.), жѣвѣѧ (f.), жѣвѣѥ (n.).  
 жѹт = *yellow*: жѹтѣи (m.), жѹтѣѧ (f.), жѹтѣѥ (n.).  
 јак = *strong*<sup>1</sup>: јачѣи (m.), јачѣѧ (f.), јачѣѥ (n.).  
 крѣв = *crooked, wrong, guilty*: крѣвѣи (m.), крѣвѣѧ (f.),  
 крѣвѣѥ (n.).  
 крѣн = *chipped*: крѣнѣи (m.), крѣнѣѧ (f.), крѣнѣѥ (n.).  
 крѹт = *stiff, rigid*: крѹтѣи (m.), крѹтѣѧ (f.), крѹтѣѥ (n.).  
 лѧсан = *easy*: лѧшнѣи (m.), лѧшнѣѧ (f.), лѧшнѣѥ (n.).  
 лѹд = *mad, stupid*: лѹдѣи (m.), лѹдѣѧ (f.), лѹдѣѥ (n.).  
 лѹт = *angry, strong or hot* (of food): лѹтѣи (m.), лѹтѣѧ (f.),  
 лѹтѣѥ (n.).  
 млѧд = *young*: млѧдѣи (m.), млѧдѣѧ (f.), млѧдѣѥ (n.).  
 плѧв = *blue*<sup>3</sup> (also *fair* of hair): плѧвѣи (m.), плѧвѣѧ (f.),  
 плѧвѣѥ (n.).  
 прѣк(ѣ) = *short* (of distance, of temper): прѣчѣи (m.), прѣчѣѧ  
 (f.), прѣчѣѥ (n.).  
 рѣѣ = *red-haired*: рѣѣѣи (m.), рѣѣѣѧ (f.), рѣѣѣѥ (n.).  
 сѣд = *grey-haired*: сѣѣѣи (m.), сѣѣѣѧ (f.), сѣѣѣѥ (n.).  
 скѹп = *dear* (only of price): скѹпѣи (m.), скѹпѣѧ (f.),  
 скѹпѣѥ (n.).  
 сѹв or сѹх = *dry*<sup>4</sup>: сѹвѣи (m.), сѹвѣѧ (f.), сѹвѣѥ (n.).  
 тврѣд = *hard*: тврѣѣи (m.), тврѣѣѧ (f.), тврѣѣѥ (n.).  
 тѣсан = *tight*: тѣшнѣи (m.), тѣшнѣѧ (f.), тѣшнѣѥ (n.).  
 тѣх = *quiet, calm*: тѣшѣи (m.), тѣшѣѧ (f.), тѣшѣѥ (n.).

<sup>1</sup> Literally and figuratively.<sup>2</sup> Of liquids, also of hair.<sup>3</sup> Other words for *blue* are сѣнѣи (= *dark blue*) and, especially of the sea, мѣдар.<sup>4</sup> *Wet* is мѣкар.

туп = *blunt* (also *stupid*): тупый (*m.*), тупья (*f.*),  
тупьё (*n.*).

худ = *poor, thin, miserable*: худый (*m.*), худя (*f.*), худё (*n.*).

чёрн = *black, dark* (of eyes or hair): чёрный (*m.*), чёрня (*f.*),  
чёрньё (*n.*).

чвёрст = *firm*: чвёрстый (*m.*), чвёрстя (*f.*), чвёрстё (*n.*).

чѣст = *frequent* (*dense*, of trees): чѣстый (*m.*), чѣстя (*f.*),  
чѣстё (*n.*).

Besides these, a certain number of adjectives ending in -ак, -ек, -ок, and also the adjectives грдан = *ugly*, дѣбео = *thick, fat* (orig. дѣбел), and шупаль = *hollow*, also form the comparative by means of the above-mentioned endings, which are added directly to the stem after the suffixes -ак, -ек, -ок, -ан, -ел (ео), and -аль have been dropped, e.g.

высок = *high, tall*: вышій (*m.*), вышя (*f.*), вышё (*n.*).

гладак = *smooth*: гладый (*m.*), гладя (*f.*), гладё (*n.*).

грдан = *ugly*: грдай (*m.*), грдая (*f.*), грдаё (*n.*).

далек = *far*: дальйй (*m.*), далья (*f.*), дальё (*n.*).

дѣбео = *fat, thick*<sup>1</sup>: дѣбый (*m.*), дѣбя (*f.*), дѣбё (*n.*).

дубок = *deer*: дубый (*m.*), дубя (*f.*), дубё (*n.*).

дугачак = *long* (of things): дужйй (*m.*), дужя (*f.*), дужё (*n.*).

кра́так = *short*: крадай (*m.*), крадая (*f.*), крадаё (*n.*).

низак = *low*: нйжйй (*m.*), нйжа (*f.*), нйжё (*n.*).

плі́так = *shallow*: плйййй (*m.*), плййя (*f.*), плййё (*n.*).

сла́дак = *sweet*: сладай (*m.*), сладая (*f.*), сладаё (*n.*).

ўзак = *narrow*: ўжйй (*m.*), ўжа (*f.*), ўжё (*n.*).

широк = *broad, wide*: шйрйй (*m.*), шйра (*f.*), шйрё (*n.*).

шупаль = *hollow*: шупый (*m.*), шупя (*f.*), шупё (*n.*).

тѣжак = *heavy, difficult*: тѣжйй (*m.*), тѣжа (*f.*), тѣжё (*n.*).

2. Only the following four adjectives form the comparative with the second group of endings :

<sup>1</sup> Of solid things.

лѣк = *easy, light* : лѣкшій (м.), лѣкшѣ (ф.), лѣкшѣ (н.).

лѣп = *beautiful, pretty* : лѣпшій (м.), лѣпшѣ (ф.), лѣпшѣ (н.).

мѣк = *soft, fine* : мѣкшій (м.), мѣкшѣ (ф.), мѣкшѣ (н.).

млѣк = *tepid* : млѣкшій <sup>1</sup> (м.), млѣкшѣ (ф.), млѣкшѣ (н.).

3. All the other adjectives form the comparative with the third group of endings, by adding them to the stem, e.g.

стѣр = *old* : стѣријѣ (м.), стѣријѣ (ф.), стѣријѣ (н.).

јѣфтин <sup>2</sup> = *cheap* : јѣфтинијѣ (м.), јѣфтинијѣ (ф.), јѣфтинијѣ (н.).

зѣдовѣлан = *content* : зѣдовѣлнијѣ (м.), зѣдовѣлнијѣ (ф.), зѣдовѣлнијѣ (н.).

јѣначан = *courageous* : јѣначнијѣ (м.), јѣначнијѣ (ф.), јѣначнијѣ (н.).

тѣпао = *warm* : тѣплијѣ (м.), тѣплијѣ (ф.), тѣплијѣ (н.).

Cf. the phonetic rules, pp. 17 ff.

The **Superlative** is formed by adding the prefix нѣј- to the comparative, e.g.

нѣјдражѣ = *dearest* (cf. p. 85).

нѣјлѣпшѣ = *most beautiful*.

нѣјдубѣѣ = *deepest*.

нѣјетаријѣ = *oldest*.

Some adjectives have no positive degree, but only the comparative and superlative, e.g.

гѣрнѣѣ = *upper*.

дѣнѣѣ <sup>3</sup> = *lower*.

прѣвѣѣ = *first*.

пѣследнѣѣ = *last*.

прѣднѣѣ = *front*.

стрѣжнѣѣ (or зѣднѣѣ) = *hind, back*.

<sup>1</sup> The form млѣчѣѣ is also found.

<sup>2</sup> From the Greek *εἰς*.

<sup>3</sup> Originally долѣѣѣ.

## 88 COMPARATIVE AND SUPERLATIVE ADJECTIVES

The comparative and superlative of some adjectives are formed from quite different stems, as in other languages, e.g.

дѡбар ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>good</i> , бѡлѣй = <i>better</i> , нѡјболѣй = <i>best</i> .		
{ зѡо ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>bad</i> , гѡрѣй = <i>worse</i> , нѡјгорѣй = <i>worst</i> .		
зѡѡ ( <i>f.</i> )	гѡрѡ	нѡјгорѡ
зѡѡ ( <i>n.</i> )	гѡрѣ	нѡјгорѣ
вѣлики = <i>big</i>	вѣкѣй	нѡјвѣкѣй
мѡли = <i>little</i>	мѡнѣй	нѡјмѡнѣй

The declension of the comparative and superlative adjectives follows that of the definite adjectives, but in the gen. dat. and loc. sing. masc. and neut. they have the endings -era, -emy, because their stems always end in *j* or *ш*.

Comparison is expressed by нѣго or ѡд, cf. p. 89.

N.B. The verb вѡлети (pres. вѡлѣм, cf. pp. 145, 149) = *to like*, has comparative and superlative forms, viz. вѡлижѣти (pres. вѡлижѣм) = *to prefer*, for which also вѡшѣ вѡлети is used, and нѡјвѡлети (pres. нѡјвѡлѣм) = *to like best of all*.

## CHAPTER 15

### EXERCISE ON THE TWO PREVIOUS CHAPTERS

#### Vocabulary

инжѣнѣр ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>engineer</i>	друштво ( <i>n.</i> ) = <i>society</i>
слѣга ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>man-servant</i>	нѣвоља ( <i>f.</i> ) = <i>misery</i>
пѡложѡј ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>position</i>	вѡрош ( <i>f.</i> ) = <i>town, city</i>
вѣчѣ ( <i>n.</i> ) = <i>evening</i>	грѡд ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>city, fortress</i>
мѣсто ( <i>n.</i> ) = <i>place</i>	стѡн ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>apartment, flat</i>
жѣвѡт ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>life</i>	
Sing. дѡбар ( <i>m.</i> ), дѡбра ( <i>f.</i> ), дѡбро ( <i>n.</i> ) } = <i>good</i>	
Pl. дѡбри ( <i>m.</i> ), дѡбре ( <i>f.</i> ), дѡбра ( <i>n.</i> ) }	
бѡлѣй, бѡлѡ, бѡлѣ = <i>better</i>	издрѣжѣлив, -ивѡ, -иво = <i>durable, hardy</i>
пѡслѣшѡн, -шнѡ, -шно = <i>obedient</i>	гѡрд, -ѡ, -ѡ = <i>proud, arrogant</i>

празан, -зна, -зно = *empty*  
 раван, -вна, -вно = *even, level*  
 љубазан, -зна, -зно = *kind, amiable*  
 миран, -рна, -рно = *quiet, peaceful*  
 срећан, -ћна, -ћно = *happy, fortunate*<sup>1</sup>  
 задовѡлан, -љна, -љно = *content, pleased*  
 пријатан, -тна, -тно = *agreeable, pleasant*  
 музикалан, -лна, -лно = *musical*

корисан,<sup>2</sup> -сна, -сно = *useful, profitable*  
 висок, -а, -о = *high, tall*  
 скуп, скупа, -по = *dear, expensive*  
 жив, жива, -во = *alive, lively*  
 туп, тупа, -по = *blunt*<sup>3</sup>  
 тесан, тесна, -сно = *tight*  
 тих, тиха, -хо = *calm*  
 брз, брза, -зо = *quick*  
 сѣд, сѣда, -до = *grey-haired*  
 густ, густа, -то = *dense, thick*  
 дубок, дубока, -ко = *deep*

For the prepositions and adverbs, cf. pp. 151, 179.

Comparison is expressed either by *него* = *than*; or by *од* (cf. p. 89) = *from*; in the first case the thing compared is in the nom., in the second in the gen.

### Reading Exercises

1. Буди добар и послушан. 2. Да ли би ваше дете било бдље и послушнијѣ кад<sup>4</sup> би било у школи?—Било бй.<sup>5</sup>  
 3. Будимо издржљиви у невољи. 4. Да ли би ви били горди кад би били врло богати?—Не бих. 5. Будите љубазни прѣма својим слугама. 6. Нека буде код својѣ куће сутра увече. 7. Нека буду мирни на својим мѣстима. 8. Бйо бих много срећниј и задовѡлниј кад би(х) бйо у вашѣм полагају (or usually : . . . да сам у вашѣм полагају). 9. Било би нам ведма пријатно да смо били у вашѣм друштву. 10. Да сам (or кад би(х) била) музикална, била бих потпуно срећна. 11. Да ли би било кориснијѣ за њѣга кад би бйо инжињѣр?—Бй

<sup>1</sup> *unhappy, unfortunate*, is *несрећан*.

<sup>2</sup> Also *користан*.

<sup>4</sup> *кад* or *када* = *if*.

<sup>3</sup> *sharp* is *оштар*.

<sup>5</sup> Or simply : *бй*.

(ог било би). 12. Зар би њихов живот био мирнији кад не би били заједно?—Био би. 13. Зар она не би била задовољнија у својој кући?—Не би. 14. Наша варош била би лепша кад(а) би била пored реке. 15. Мој старији брат је већи (ог виши) од мене (ог . . . него ја). 16. Његово одело је скупље од мога. 17. Најбогатији (с. људи) нису најсрећнији. 18. Најбоље је да будемо добри пријатељи. 19. Лети је живот пријатнији у селу него у вароши. 20. Наш стан је у најживљој улици наше вароши. 21. Ваш нoж је много тупљи од мога. 22. Његов капут је сувише тесан за мене. 23. На овоме месту река је најтиша. 24. Њена коза је много црња него моја. 25. Ваши коњи су бржи него моји; они су најбржи у нашем граду. 26. Коза (у) моје мајке је сеђа него коза (у) мога оца. 27. У нашем дворишту трава је гушћа него у вашем. 28. Овај бунар је дубљи него тај. 29. Ко је виши, ви или ваш брат?—Ја. 30. Чије су очи црње, његове или њене?—Њене.

### English Sentences

1. Do not be proud. 2. Be happy and content. 3. Would he be more obedient in school?—Yes, he would. 4. Are they kind to their men-servants? 5. We should be very glad to be with you. 6. Would she be happier at her home? 7. Would it not be more useful for them to be engineers? 8. We should be happier if we were in his position. 9. My brother is taller than his. 10. Her flat is more expensive than ours. 11. The happiest people are not the richest. 12. It would be better for them to be friends. 13. This street is very quiet. 14. That knife is blunt. 15. Her coat is not tight. 16. Are her horses quicker than yours? 17. Is her hair grey?—No, it is still dark. 18. This well is not deep. 19. Whose eyes are darker, hers or mine? 20. Whose knife is this? It is very sharp. 21. The river is not rapid at this place. 22. This



mountain is higher than that. It is the highest. 23. Beside the river is a thick wood. 24. His hair is thicker and longer than mine. 25. This street is broader than that. 26. This book is thinner and dearer than that. 27. Those books are thicker and cheaper than these. 28. Your church is older and more beautiful than ours. 29. In our town living is dearer than in your village. 30. His suit of clothes is more durable than mine. 31. We were in very pleasant society yesterday.

## CHAPTER 16

### THE IMPERFECT AND PLUPERFECT OF *TO BE*

#### 1. THE IMPERFECT

THIS tense, like the aorist (cf. p. 81), is much used in literature, but not often in conversation. It is also used as the auxiliary verb to form the *pluperfect*. In conversation both the aorist and the imperfect are almost always replaced by the (compound) past tense (cf. p. 59 f.).

The imperfect of бѣти is :

- |                          |                      |                          |
|--------------------------|----------------------|--------------------------|
| 1. (jâ) бѣjax            | or бѣх, <i>I was</i> | (mî) (бѣjаcмо) or бѣcмо  |
| 2. (tî) (бѣjаше) ,, бѣше |                      | (vî) (бѣjате) ,, бѣте    |
| 3. { (ôh)                |                      | { (ôhi)                  |
| { (ôha) (бѣjаше) ,, бѣше |                      | { (ôhe) (бѣjaxy) ,, бѣxy |
| { (ôho)                  |                      | { (ôha)                  |

The forms in brackets are less frequent.

The interrogative, negative, and negative-interrogative forms are formed in the same manner as those of the present.

2. The PLUPERFECT of бѣти is jâ бѣjax бѣо, &c., but it is very seldom used.

## CHAPTER 17

## THE NUMERALS

THERE are (1) Cardinal, (2) Ordinal, and (3) Collective numerals.

## 1. Cardinal Numerals

- |  |           |
|--|-----------|
| 1. jèдан ( <i>m.</i> ), jèдна ( <i>f.</i> ), jèдно ( <i>n.</i> ) | 6. шèст   |
| 2. двâ ( <i>m.</i> ), двê ( <i>f.</i> ), двâ ( <i>n.</i> )       | 7. сèдам  |
| 3. трî   | 8. ðсам   |
| 4. чèтири  | 9. дèвèт  |
| 5. пèт   | 10. дèсèт |

The numbers between 11 and 19 are formed by prefixing the numbers from 1 to 9 to the number дèсèт, inserting between them the preposition на = *on to*, whereupon, owing to contraction, the following forms are obtained :

- |               |                           |
|---------------|---------------------------|
| 11. jèдàнаест | 16. шèснаест              |
| 12. двâнаест  | 17. сèдâмнаест            |
| 13. трîнаест  | 18. осâмнаест             |
| 14. чètрнаест | 19. девèтнаест            |
| 15. пèтнаест  | 20. двáдесèт <sup>1</sup> |

The numbers 20, 30, 40, 50, 60, 70, 80, and 90 are formed by a combination of the numbers 1-9 with 10. The numbers between these are formed as follows :

- |                                    |                            |
|------------------------------------|----------------------------|
| 21. двáдесет <sup>2</sup> и jèдан  | 27. двáдесет и сèдам       |
| 22. двáдесет и <sup>3</sup> двâ    | 28. двáдесет и ðсам        |
| 23. двáдесет и <sup>3</sup> трî    | 29. двáдесет и дèвèт       |
| 24. двáдесет и <sup>3</sup> чèтири | 30. трíдесет <sup>2</sup>  |
| 25. двáдесет и <sup>3</sup> пèт    | 40. чètрдèсèт <sup>2</sup> |
| 26. двáдесет и <sup>3</sup> шèст   | 50. педèсèт                |

<sup>1</sup> Pronounced quickly, двàес.

<sup>2</sup> Pronounced quickly, двàест, трíест, чètрест.

<sup>3</sup> Often pronounced with an accent on the и.

60. шездѣсѣт <sup>1</sup>	400. чѣтири стѣтине
70. седамдѣсѣт	500. пѣт стѣтинѧ <sup>3</sup>
80. осамдѣсѣт	600. шѣст стѣтинѧ
90. деведѣсѣт	700. сѣдам стѣтинѧ
100. стѣ ор стѣтина	800. ѓсам стѣтинѧ
101. сто јѣдан, &c.	900. дѣвѣт стѣтинѧ
200. двѣста ор две стѣтине <sup>2</sup>	1000. хѣљада ор тѣсуѣа
300. трѣста ор три стѣтине	2000. двѣ хѣљаде, &c.

Only the numbers јѣдан, двѧ, трѣ, чѣтири, стѣтина, and хѣљада (or тѣсуѣа) are declined. The last three are declined like feminine substantives, cf. жѣна, p. 47. The number јѣдан is declined like the pronoun ѓвѧј, cf. p. 56. It varies according to gender as follows : јѣдан (*m.*), јѣдна (*f.*), јѣдно (*n.*).

Двѧ (*m.*), двѣ (*f.*), двѧ (*n.*) is declined as follows :

Nom. двѧ ( <i>m., n.</i> )	двѣ ( <i>f.</i> )	Acc. двѧ ( <i>m., n.</i> )	двѣ ( <i>f.</i> )
Gen. двѧју	двѣју	Inst. двѧма	двѣма
Dat. двѧма	двѣма	Loc. двѧма	двѣма

In the same way are declined the two following words :

ѓба ( <i>m., n.</i> ), ѓбе ( <i>f.</i> )	} = both.
ѓбадвѧ ( <i>m., n.</i> ), ѓбадвѣ ( <i>f.</i> )	

The numbers трѣ and чѣтири are declined as follows :

Nom. Acc. трѣ ( <i>m., f., n.</i> ), чѣтири ( <i>m., f., n.</i> )
Gen. трѣју ( <i>m., f., n.</i> ), чѣтрѣју ( <i>m., f., n.</i> )
Dat., Instr., Loc. трѣма ( <i>m., f., n.</i> ), чѣтрѣма ( <i>m., f., n.</i> )

If the numbers двѧ, ѓба, ѓбадвѧ, трѣ, and чѣтири follow a preposition they are not usually declined, e.g. у двѧ (or трѣ) сѧта = *at two o'clock*, с чѣтири књѣге = *with four books*, cf. p. 155.

The number јѣдан, -а, -о, is very often used with an

<sup>1</sup> Pronounced quickly, шѣсѣт.    <sup>2</sup> This is *gen. sing.*, cf. p. 97.

<sup>3</sup> This is *gen. pl.*, cf. p. 97.

indefinite meaning, corresponding to the English indefinite article, e.g.

јѣдан чѣвек = *a man*.

јѣдна жѣна = *a woman*.

јѣдно дѣте = *a child*.

N.B. *One of* is rendered as follows : јѣдан од вѣс = *one of you*, but јѣдан мѣј прѣјатељ = *one of my friends*.

## 2. Ordinal Numerals

These are really adjectives used in the definite forms and are declined like them. From 5 to 99 they are formed by adding -и to the cardinal numerals. The numbers 1-4, 100, 1000, are different, e.g.

- |                               |                        |
|-------------------------------|------------------------|
| 1. прѣи = <i>first</i>        | 19. девѣтнаестѣ        |
| 2. дрѣи = <i>second</i> , &c. | 20. двѣдѣсѣти          |
| 3. трѣѣи                      | 21. двѣдѣсет прѣи, &c. |
| 4. чѣтврѣти                   | 30. трѣдѣсѣти          |
| 5. пѣти                       | 40. чѣтрдѣсѣти         |
| 6. шѣсти                      | 50. пѣдѣсѣти           |
| 7. сѣдмѣ                      | 60. шѣздѣсѣти          |
| 8. ѣсмѣ                       | 70. сѣдамдѣсѣти        |
| 9. дѣвѣти                     | 80. ѣсамдѣсѣти         |
| 10. дѣсѣти                    | 90. дѣведѣсѣти         |
| 11. јѣдѣнаестѣ                | 100. стѣти             |
| 12. двѣнаестѣ                 | 200. двѣстѣти          |
| 13. трѣнаестѣ                 | 300. трѣстѣти          |
| 14. чѣтрнаестѣ                | 400. чѣтиристѣти       |
| 15. пѣтнаестѣ                 | 500. пѣтстѣти, &c.     |
| 16. шѣснаестѣ                 | 1000. хѣладѣти         |
| 17. сѣдамнаестѣ               | 1001. хѣладу прѣи      |
| 18. ѣсамнаестѣ                | 2000. двѣхѣладѣти, &c. |

## 3. Collective Numerals

These are used only in the plural for all genders, and in the neuter singular.

<i>Pl. Masc. Fem. Neut.</i>	<i>Neut. sing.</i>
2. двоји, двоје, двоја	двоје, обоје
3. трџи, &c.	трџе
4. четвори	четворо
5. пѣтори	пѣторо
6. шѣстори	шѣсторо
7. сеѣдмори	сеѣдморо
8. ѣсмори	ѣсморо
9. дѣветори	дѣветоро
10. дѣсетори, &c.	дѣсеторо, &c.

The plural collectives are used with such substantives as are only used in the plural (cf. p. 30) or as pairs, e.g.

двоји волови = 2 *pairs*<sup>1</sup> of *oxen*.

трџе чарапе = 3 *pairs* of *stockings*.

четворе новине = 4 *newspapers*.

четвора кола = 4 *carriages*

(кола, or more usually точак = *wheel*,<sup>2</sup> чѣтири кола, or точка = 4 *wheels*; точак also = a *bicycle*).

These are declined like the plural of мџи.

The neut. sing. collectives are used especially when numbers of living things of mixed genders are indicated. They require the genitive, e.g. било нас је трџе у врту а двоје у кући = *there were three of us (men and women) in the garden and two in the house*. When people, both men and women, are indicated, the word људи<sup>3</sup> (cf. pp. 30, 48) is

<sup>1</sup> A pair is also пѣр.

<sup>2</sup> Is also the name of the national Serbian dance.

<sup>3</sup> Pl. N. V. људи, G. људи, D. I. L. људима, A. људе.

usually replaced by *ѣх* or *ѣѣх* (= *of them*), e.g. *тѣмо ѣх је чѣтворо* or *ѣѣх је тѣмо чѣтворо* = *there are four people there*; *чѣтворо љѣди* by itself = *four people*. They are also used frequently with collective nouns (cf. p. 57), which are then put in the genitive, e.g. *двѣ дѣце* (gen. of *дѣца*) = *a couple of children*, though one can also say *двѣ дѣтета* (gen. of *дѣте*); *трѣје пѣлѣди* (gen. of *пѣлѣд*) = *three chickens*, but one can also say *трѣ пѣлета* (gen. of *пѣле*). One says *пѣторо брѣѣ* (gen. of *брѣѣ*, cf. p. 47) = *five brothers*, but *двѣ*, *трѣ*, *чѣтири брѣта* (gen. of *брѣт*, cf. p. 44) = 2, 3, 4 *brothers*. One says *двѣ*, *трѣ*, *чѣтири чѣвека* = 2, 3, 4 *men*, but *пѣт*, *пѣст*, &c., *љѣди* = 5, 6, &c., *men*. Feminine nouns are always preceded by cardinal numerals, e.g. *двѣ жѣне* (cf. p. 47) = *two women*, *трѣ сѣстре* = *three sisters*.

These neut. sing. collectives are declined as follows :

Nom. Acc. *двѣје*, *трѣје*, *чѣтворо*.

Gen. *двѣга*, *трѣга*, *чѣтвѣрга*.

Dat. Inst. Loc. *двѣма*, *трѣ(ј)ма*, *чѣтвѣрма*.

All the collective numbers ending in *-оро* are declined like *чѣтворо*.

All these collectives are seldom used except in the nom. and acc., and after prepositions usually remain in the nom.

4. From the collective numerals are derived feminine substantives ending in *-ица*, which have the functions of *numerals* and are used only of *men*, e.g.

*двѣјица* = *two men*

*чѣтвѣрица*

*обѣјица* = *both men*

*пѣторица*

*трѣјица*

*шѣстѣрица*, &c.

One can also say *двѣ чѣвека*, but one *only* says *двѣ брѣта*, *трѣ војниѣа*, when category is specified.

5. The distributive numerals are formed by putting the preposition *по* before the cardinal numerals, e.g.

пѡ јѣдан = <i>at the rate of</i>	пѡ чѣтири
<i>one, or one each</i>	пѡ дѣсет
пѡ двѧ	пѡ стѡ
пѡ трѣ	пѡ хѣладу

6. Multiplicative numerals are formed also from the cardinal numerals by putting after them the noun пѣт = *way, road, a time*, e.g.

јѣданпѣт = *once*, or јѣдан пѣт.

двѧпѣт = *twice*, or двѧ пѣта.

трѣпѣт = *three times*, or трѣ пѣта.

чѣтири пѣт = *four times*, or чѣтири пѣта, &c.

#### 7. Fractional numerals :

$\frac{1}{2}$  = (јѣдна) полѡвина

$\frac{1}{10}$  = (јѣдна) дѣсѣтина

$\frac{1}{3}$  = (јѣдна) трѣћина

$1\frac{1}{2}$  = јѣдан ѣ пѡ

$\frac{1}{4}$  = (јѣдна) четвѣртина

$3\frac{1}{2}$  = трѣ ѣ пѡ

$\frac{1}{5}$  = (јѣдна) пѣтина

$10\frac{1}{2}$  = дѣсѣт ѣ пѡ

#### Notes

After all the numbers from 5–20 inclusive, from 25–30 inclusive, &c., the gen. pl. is used ; after the numbers 2, 3, 4, 22, 23, 24, 32, 33, 34, &c., the gen. sing.,<sup>1</sup> e.g.

пѣт књѣгѧ = 5 *books*.

двѣ књѣге = 2 *books*.

дѣсѣт дѣвојѧкѧ = 10 *girls*.

After all such numbers as 21, 31, 41, &c., the substantive is in the nom. sing., e.g. двѧдѣсет и јѣдна гѡдина = 21 *years*.

трѣ дѣвѡјке = 3 *girls*.

трѣ дѣтѣта = 3 *children*

(or : трѡје дѣцѣ = 'a 3 of children').

<sup>1</sup> This is really the old Dual Number whose use became extended to the numbers 3 and 4.

When an adjective comes between the numerals 2, 3, 4, &c., and the noun, it is put in the gen. sing. of the indefinite form, e.g. *два главна града* or *две главне вѣроши* = *the two principal towns*; after 5, &c., in the gen. pl., e.g. *пет главних сѣла* = *the five chief villages*; these remain unchanged after prepositions, e.g. *са две* (or *дѣе*) *своје руке* = *with one's two hands*.

The phrase *What is the date to-day?* is translated: *Кѡји је* (sc. *датум*) *дана*с?

The phrase *What is the day of the week?* is translated: *Кѡји је дан* *дана*с?

In expressing the date only the last of each series of numbers is an ordinal number, e.g.

*дана*с је *тридесет први* (sc. *дан*) *јануар хиљаду девѣт стѡти*на *седамнаесте* *гѡдине* = *to-day is the 31st (of) January 1917*; it is to be noticed that in such phrases the *month* is in the nominative, *thousand* is in the accusative,<sup>1</sup> 9 is in the nominative, 100 is in the genitive after 9 (cf. p. 97), and 17 is in the genitive singular, as is also *year*, i.e. *of the seventeenth year*.

In such phrases as *on the 31st . . .* the genitive is used without any preposition, e.g.

*Кѡд сте рѡђени?* = *When were you born?*

*Другогѡ фебруара хиљаду ѡсам стѡти*на *деведѣст* *трећѣ* *гѡдине* = *On the 2nd of February 1893*.

The time of day is expressed as follows:

*Кѡлико је сѡти* <sup>2</sup>? = *What time is it?* (lit. *how many is it*

<sup>1</sup> The reason is not clear, but *стѡтина* and *хиљада* are often put in the *acc.* when another case would be expected; it is a sort of indeclinable form and can be governed by a preposition, e.g. *у хиљаду ѡсам стѡтина деведѣст девѣтѡј гѡдини* = *in the year 1899* (*loc.* after *y*).

<sup>2</sup> Irregular gen. pl. of *cār*, originally *cāxat* (a Turkish word).



of hours?). Answers: *jèdan cāt* = 1 o'clock, *dvā cāta* = 2 o'clock, *pēt cāti* = 5 o'clock.

The parts of an hour are expressed as follows: *pōla dvā* or *jèdan* й по or *jèdan* и *трідесēt* = 1.30.

<i>dvā</i> и <i>pētnaest</i>	} = 2.15.
<i>dvā</i> и <i>čētvrt</i> (or <i>frtāl</i> )	
<i>čētvrt</i> (or <i>frtāl</i> ) <i>prōšlo</i> <sup>1</sup> <i>dvā</i>	
<i>pētnaest</i> ( <i>minúta</i> ) <i>prōšlo</i> <i>dvā</i>	

All these are commonly used, though the first is considered the best. The word *frtāl* comes from the German word *Viertel* = *quarter*, and does not sound well.

<i>dvānaest</i> и <i>трідесēt</i> и <i>pēt</i>	} = 12.35.
<i>dvādesēt</i> и <i>pēt</i> ( <i>minúta</i> ) до <i>jèdan</i>	
<i>pēt minúta</i> <i>prōšlo</i> <i>pōla jèdan</i>	} = 12.45.
<i>dvānaest</i> и <i>četrdēsēt</i> и <i>pēt</i>	

<i>čētvrt</i> (or <i>frtāl</i> ) до (or на) <i>jèdan</i>	} = 12.45.
<i>trī čētvrtī</i> (or <i>frtāla</i> ) на <i>jèdan</i>	
<i>pētnaest</i> ( <i>minúta</i> ) до <i>jèdan</i>	}
у <i>kōliko cāti</i> . . . ? = <i>at what o'clock?</i>	

у *čētiri cāta* = *at 4 o'clock*.

у *pēt cāti* = *at 5 o'clock*.

## CHAPTER 18

### THE USE OF THE NUMERALS

#### Vocabulary

*dān* (*m.*) = *day*

*minūt* (*m.*) = *minute*

*nēdēla* (*f.*) = *week*

*gōdina* (*f.*) = *year*

*pīle* (*n.*)

*pīlād* (*f. pl.*)

*pēd* (*m.*) = *row* (e.g. of chairs)

} = *chicken*

<sup>1</sup> Literally = 15 gone 2.

## Reading Exercise

1. Два ученика, три ученице и четири учитеља су у школи. 2. Шест ученица и пет ученика нису били у цркви. 3. Ми имамо<sup>1</sup> дванаест учитеља у нашој школи. 4. Синоћ је у нашем друштву било седам људи, девет госпођа, три девојке и пет дечака. 5. Дан и ноћ имају<sup>1</sup> двадесет и четири часа (ог сата); један сат има<sup>1</sup> шездесет минута, а један минута шездесет секунда. 6. Један месец има или двадесет и осам или двадесет и девет или тридесет дана или тридесет и један дан. 7. Једна година има три стотине (ог триста) шездесет и пет или шездесет и шест дана. 8. У једној години има дванаест месеци, у месецу има четири недеље. 9. Ми смо у двадесетом веку, у хиљаду девет стотина седмнаестој години. 10. Ја сам био у Београду хиљаду осам стотина осамдесет шесте године. 11. Кад сте били у Лондону?—Био сам хиљаду осам стотина деведесет девете. 12. Оба брата су ми жива. 13. Обе његове сестре биле су у Паризу. 14. Први пут сам био код вас кад ми је било тринајест година. 15. Обдојца су здрави. 16. Трђа кола су пред кућом. 17. Седморо деце није било у школи. 18. Двадесеторо људи било је у цркви. 19. У врту је само четворо јагњади (ог у врту су само четири јагњета. 20. Четворица нису Енглези а трдојца јесу. 21. Десеторица су Срби а дванаесторица су Руси. 22. Трђе пилади је у шуми (ог три пилета су . . .). 23. У свакој клупи има по два ђака. 24. У сваком реду је (ог су) по четири војника. 25. Трипут су били у Лондону. 26. Седам пута сам био у Паризу. 27. То је један од мојих најбољих пријатеља.

<sup>1</sup> Verb имати = *to have*, cf. p. 104.

## PART II

### CHAPTER 19

#### THE VERBS

##### THE FORMATION OF THE INFINITIVE AND THE PRESENT

THE Serbian verb has the following parts : the present, the past (compound past or perfect), the imperfect, the aorist, the pluperfect, the future, the exact future, the conditional, the imperative, the infinitive, the present and past indeclinable participles (or gerunds), the past participles (declinable) active and passive.

The present, imperfect, and aorist are simple tenses ; the future, past (compound perfect), pluperfect, and conditional are compound tenses. Serbian strictly speaking possesses only one voice, the active ; the passive is expressed by means of auxiliary verbs and the passive participle.

There is no subjunctive mood.

The commonest parts of the verb in general (conversational) use are : the present, past, future, conditional, imperative, and infinitive.

In order to form the parts of the verb it is necessary to know the infinitive and the present, because very often the present stem, from which are formed the present tense and the imperative, is different from the infinitive stem, from which are formed the infinitive, past, future, and conditional.

The infinitive of most verbs ends in -ти, and this is usually joined to the root of the verb by the following connecting vowels or syllables : -а-, -ова- (-ева-, -ива-), -ну-, -и-, and -е-, e.g. зв-а-ти = *to call*, вѣр-ова-ти = *to believe*,

им-а-ти = *to have*, дѣг-ну-ти = *to lift*, ѹч-и-ти = *to learn*, вид-е-ти = *to see*. Зва-, верова-, има-, дигну-, учи-, виде-, are called the *infinitive stem*.

Sometimes the ending -ти is added directly to the root of the verb, e.g. трѣс-ти = *to shake*, чѹ-ти- = *to hear*, пѣ-ти = *to drink*; when the root of such verbs ends in a guttural (г, к, х), this last coalesces with the т of the infinitive ending and forms **ћ**, e.g.

моћи = *to be able*, derived from мог-ти

рѣћи = *to tell*, „ „ рек-ти

лѣћи = *to lie down*, „ „ лег-ти

сѣћи = *to cut*, „ „ сек-ти

врћи or врѣћи = *to thresh*, „ вр(е)х-ти

When the root of such verbs ends in a dental (д or т), this last by a process of dissimilation becomes с, e.g.

плѣсти = *to plait, to knit*, derived from плет-ти

красти = *to steal*, „ „ крад-ти

The root of these verbs is thus disguised in the infinitive, but reappears in the present and in other parts of the verb.

The present is formed by adding the personal endings to the root, to which they are joined by the following connecting vowels or syllables, -е-, -не-, -је-, -и-, -а-, e.g. зов-ѣ-м = *I call*, дѣг-нѣ-м = *I lift*, чѹ-јѣ-м = *I hear*, им-а-м = *I have*, ѹч-ѣ-м = *I learn*.

Verbs which have -ова-, -ива-, and -ева- as the connecting syllable in the infinitive, have -yje- in the present, e.g. вѣр-yje-м = *I believe*; the syllable -ова-, &c., arose as the result of forms such as вер-у-а-ти; this is a double formation, two syllables (-у-а-, -у-је-) connecting the root with the infinitive and the present endings.

When the ending -е-м is added to verbs with the root in a guttural, г, к, х become ж, ч, ш, e.g. сек-е-м (inf. сѣћи,

cf. p. 18) becomes *сѣч-ѣ-м* = *I cut*, but the ending of the 3rd pers. pl., which is *-y* and is added without any connecting vowel, does not affect such roots, e.g. *сѣк-y* = *they cut*.

When the ending *-е-м* is added to verbs with the root in a dental, this last remains, e.g. *плѣт-ѣ-м* = *I plait, I knit*.

The verb *мѡѡи* has the form *мѡry* for both 1st pers. sing. and 3rd pers. pl., but in the other persons *г* becomes *ж*, e.g. *мѡж-е* = *he can*.

Such forms as *зове-*, *дигне-*, *чује-*, *има-*, *учи-*, *верује-*, *може-*, *тресе-*, *плете-*, are called the *present stem*.

From this it will be seen that it is impossible to deduce the present from the infinitive, although in a large number of verbs the stem of both happens to be the same.

The verbs are divided into *four* classes according to the vowels or syllable which connects the root with the personal endings of the present: *-е-*, *-не-*, *-је-*, and *-и-*; those with the connecting vowel *-а-* are really a subdivision of the *-је* verbs, but are so numerous and common that they are here treated as a *fifth* class.

Of actual kinds of present endings (consisting of connecting vowel and personal ending) there are only *three*, viz.

	I.	II.	III.
Sing. 1.	<i>-ѣм</i>	<i>-ѣм</i>	<i>-ѣм</i>
2.	<i>-ѣш</i>	<i>-ѣш</i>	<i>-ѣш</i>
3.	<i>-ѣ</i>	<i>-ѣ</i>	<i>-ѣ</i>
Pl. 1.	<i>-ѣмо</i>	<i>-ѣмо</i>	<i>-ѣмо</i>
2.	<i>-ѣте</i>	<i>-ѣте</i>	<i>-ѣте</i>
3.	<i>-ѣ (-ejȳ)</i>	<i>-ajȳ</i>	<i>-ѣ</i>

The three forms of the present are here given in full:

I. *трѣсти* = *to shake*; II. *ѣмати*<sup>1</sup> = *to have*; III. *ѣчити* = *to learn, to teach*.

<sup>1</sup> In Serbian this verb is used only in its literal meaning, and not as an auxiliary, but cf. p. 118.

I. (jâ) трѣсѣм, <i>I shake</i> , &c.	(мѣ) трѣсѣмо
(тѣ) трѣсѣш	(вѣ) трѣсѣте
(ѡн) (ѡна) (ѡно) трѣсѣ	(ѡни) (ѡне) (ѡна) трѣсѣ
II. (jâ) ѣмѣм, <i>I have</i> , &c.	(мѣ) ѣмѣмо
(тѣ) ѣмѣш	(вѣ) ѣмѣте
(ѡн) (ѡна) (ѡно) ѣмѣ	(ѡни) (ѡне) (ѡна) ѣмѣ
III. (jâ) ѣчѣм, <i>I learn, I teach</i> , &c.	(мѣ) ѣчѣмо
(тѣ) ѣчѣш	(вѣ) ѣчѣте
(ѡн) (ѡна) (ѡно) ѣчѣ	(ѡни) (ѡне) (ѡна) ѣчѣ

That is to say, for practical purposes, the present endings of the verbs of the first three classes (-е-, -не-, -је-) are the same.

According to their infinitives, i.e. the vowels or syllables which connect the root with the infinitive ending, the verbs fall into a far larger number of divisions which are distributed amongst the above-mentioned classes.

Of actual kinds of infinitive endings (consisting of connecting vowel or syllable and infinitive ending) there are *four*; a *fifth* category consists of those verbs in which the infinitive ending -ти is added directly to the root, viz.

1. трѣс-ти = *to shake*, чѣ-ти = *to hear*.
2. зв-ѣ-ти = *to call*, вѣр-ѣв-а-ти = *to believe*, ѣм-а-ти = *to have*.
3. дѣл-ну-ти = *to lift*.

4. Ѹч-и-ти = *to learn*.

5. вѸд-е-ти = *to see*.

The following list gives a picture of the commonest kinds of verbs divided into the five classes according to the present stem with subdivisions according to the infinitive stem.

## I.

Connecting vowel -e-.

1. Infinitive ending added directly to root :

трѣс-ти = *to shake*, root трес-, pres. stem тресе-, pres.

трѣсѣм = *I shake* <sup>1</sup> (trans.).

плѣс-ти = *to knit*, root плет-, pres. stem плете-, pres. плѣ-

тѣм = *I knit*.

сѣѣи = *to cut*, root сек-, pres. stem сече-, pres. сѣчѣм = *I cut*.<sup>2</sup>

грѣпсти = *to scratch*, root рѣб-, pres. stem рѣбе-, pres.

грѣбѣм = *I scratch*.

2. Infinitive ending preceded by -e-, which is part of the original root : <sup>3</sup>

Ѹзѣ-ти = *to take*, root -e- (Ѹз- is a prefix and -e- is the remains of an old nasal vowel, which reappears in the present ; this verb never appears except compounded), pres. stem узме-, pres. Ѹзмѣм = *I take*. Cf. Ѹт-ѣ-ти = *to take away*, pres. Ѹтмѣм.

пѸчѣ-ти = *to begin*, root -че- (also resulting from an old nasal vowel), pres. stem почне-, pres. пѸчнѣм = *I begin*.

мрѣ-ти = *to die*, root мре- (derived from меп-), pres. stem мре-, pres. мрѣм = *I die*.

Special mention must be made of the verb дѸ-нѣ-ти = *to*

<sup>1</sup> трѣсти се, *intrans.* = *to tremble*.

<sup>2</sup> N.B. *to cut the hair* is шѸшати (Class III, 2 b) рѸсу, lit. *to shear the hair*.

<sup>3</sup> To this class also belongs нѸсѸти = *to fill up (to pour out)*, cf. p. 208, pres. нѸспѣм.

*bring*, and other compounds of -нети; -не- is contracted from -неце-, and the present of this verb is донѣсѣм = *I bring*.

3. Infinitive ending joined to the root by -a- :

ЗВ-Ѧ-ТИ = *to call*,<sup>1</sup> root ЗВ- or ЗОВ-, pres. stem ЗОВЕ-, pres.  
ЗОВѢМ = *I call*.

пр-а-ти=*to wash* (trans.), root пр- or пер-, pres. stem пере-, pres. пѣрѣм=*I wash* (cf. p. 142).

Note. Not all verbs in this division lose the vowel of the root in the infinitive.

## II.

Connecting syllable -не- in the present and -ну- in the infinitive (for these verbs cf. p. 128).

дѣг-ну-ти = *to lift*, root дѣг-, pres. stem дѣгне-, pres.  
дѣгнѣм = *I lift*.

тò-нѣ-ти = *to sink, to drown* (intrans.), root то- (originally топ-), pres. stem тоне-, pres. тòнѣм = *I am sinking, I am drowning*.

Note. Many verbs which originally belonged to the first class, and have retained infinitives like those of that class, have now presents according to the second class, e.g.

лѣ̀хъ = *to lie down*, root лѣг-, pres. stem лѣгне-, pres. лѣ̀гнѣм =  
*I lie down.*

сѣсти = *to sit down*, root сед-, pres. stem седне-, pres.  
сѣднѣм = *I sit down*.

помѡћи = *to help*, root (по)мог-, pres. stem помогне-, pres.  
помогнѣм = *I help*.

Similarly the verb *crāti* = (1) *to stand still*, (2) *as an auxiliary to begin*, has as its present *crāhēm*, as have also its

<sup>1</sup> звати се = *to be called, named*, pres. зовѣ се = *is called*, како се зовѣ . . . = *what is the name of . . .*



numerous compounds, e.g. *òстати* = *to remain*, pres. *òстанѣм*, which are the *perfective* verbs (cf. p. 129) corresponding in meaning to the compounds of *-стајати*, which are *imperfective* and belong to Class III, 2 a, e.g. *òстајати* = *to remain*, pres. *òстајѣм*, *пòстати*, pres. *пòстанѣм* *perfective* and *пòстајати*, pres. *пòстајѣм* *imperfective* = *to become*.

Conversely many verbs of Class II omit the syllable -*ну*- in the formation of the past (compound) tense, e.g. *дѣгнути*, past participle active *дѣгнуо*, *дѣгнула* or *дѣгаò*, *дѣглѧ*, cf. p. 139, i.e. go into Class I.

### III.

Connecting syllable -*je*-.

1. Infinitive ending added directly to root.

a. Roots ending in vowels :

*чу-ти* = *to hear*, root and inf. stem *чу-*, pres. stem *чу-je-*, pres. *чујѣм* = *I hear*.

*пи-ти* = *to drink*, root and inf. stem *пи-*, pres. stem *пи-je-*, pres. *пијѣм* = *I drink*.

b. Roots ending in consonants :

*млѣ-ти* (derived from *мел-ти*) = *to grind*, root *мел-* (inf. stem *мле-*), pres. stem *меље-* (= *мел* + *je*), pres. *мѣљѣм* = *I grind*.

*жѣти* or *жнѣти* (derived from *жен-ти*) = *to reap*, root *жен-* (inf. stem *же-* or *жнѣ-*), pres. stem *жнѣ-* or *жањѣ-*, pres. *жнѣм* or *жањѣм* = *I reap*.

*пѣти се* (derived from *пен-ти*) = *to climb*, root *пен-* (inf. stem *пе-*), pres. stem *пење-*, pres. *пѣњѣм се* = *I climb*.

2. Infinitive ending joined to the root by -*a*-.

a. In these verbs when the root ends in a vowel, -*j*- or -*v*- is inserted in the infinitive (and also of course in those

# 108 THE FORMATION OF THE INFINITIVE

parts of the verb derived from it), in order to avoid the hiatus, e.g.

бръ-*j*-а-ти = *to shave* (trans.), root брш-, inf. stem бршја-,  
pres. stem брш-је-, pres. бршѣм = *I shave*.<sup>1</sup>

да-*v*-а-ти = *to give*, root да-, inf. stem дава-, pres. stem  
да-је-, pres. дајѣм = *I give*.

b. In these verbs, when the root ends in a consonant, this last coalesces with the -*j*- of the connecting syllable in the manner already described on pp. 18, 103, e.g.

мѣт-а-ти = *to put*, root мет-, inf. stem мета-, pres. stem  
мѣѣ- (= мет + је), pres. мѣѣм = *I put*.

лѣг-а-ти = *to (tell a) lie*, root лѣг-, inf. stem лѣга-, pres. stem  
лѣѣ- (= лѣг + је), pres. лѣѣм = *I lie*.

помѣгати = *to help*, root -маг-, inf. stem по-мага-, pres. stem  
помѣѣ- (= маг + је), pres. помѣѣм = *I help*.

плѣк-а-ти = *to weep*, root плѣк-, inf. stem плѣка-, pres. stem  
плѣѣ- (= плѣк + је), pres. плѣѣм = *I weep*.

ѣх-а-ти = *to ride*, root ѣх-, inf. stem ѣха-, pres. stem ѣѣ-  
(= ѣх + је), pres. ѣѣм = *I ride*.

вѣз-а-ти = *to bind, to tie*, root вѣз-, inf. stem вѣза-, pres.  
stem вѣѣ- (= вѣз + је), pres. вѣѣм = *I bind*.

пис-а-ти = *to write*, root пис-, inf. stem писа-, pres. stem  
пиѣѣ- (= пис + је), pres. пиѣѣм = *I write*.

пѣ-сл-а-ти = *to send*, root -сл-, inf. stem -сѣла-, pres. stem  
пѣѣ-шѣ-, pres. пѣѣшѣм = *I send*.

Note. In this verb the soft (or palatal) quality of the sound *j* has affected the *c* over the *л*; this verb is perfective (cf. p. 125), the imperfective form is слѣти, the pres. of which is слѣѣм (or шѣѣм).

тѣц-а-ти се = *to concern*, root тѣц-, inf. stem тѣца-, pres. stem  
тѣѣ-, pres. тѣѣ се (3rd pers. sing.) = *it concerns*.

<sup>1</sup> *to get shaved (p/v.)* is обрѣжати се.

In the verbs of this class, when the root ends in -м, -п, or -б, л is inserted in the present and those parts derived from it, e.g.

(х)пáм-а-ти = *to limp, to go lame*, root (х)пам-, inf. stem храма-, pres. stem храмъе- (from храм + је), pres. храмъѣм = *I limp*.

In the verbs of this class, when j is contained in the root it is absorbed in the present, e.g.

кашлѣ-а-ти = *to cough*, root кашлѣ-, inf. stem кашља-, pres. stem кашље-, pres. кашлѣм = *I cough*.

3. Infinitive ending joined to the root by -ова-, -ива-<sup>1</sup>, -(j)ева-<sup>1</sup>, and sometimes -ава-; pres. endings joined to the root by -уј(e)-, e.g.

вѣр-ова-ти = *to believe*, root вер-, inf. stem верова-, pres. stem верује-, pres. вѣрујѣм = *I believe*.

показ-ѣва-ти = *to show*, root (по)-каз-, inf. stem показива-, pres. stem показује-, pres. показујѣм = *I show*.

вој-ѣва-ти = *to make war*, root вој-, inf. stem војева-, pres. stem војује-, pres. војујѣм = *I make war*.

4. Infinitive ending joined to the root by -е-; pres. endings joined to the root by -е-, contracted from -еје-, e.g. љм-е-ти = *to know how*, root љм-, inf. and pres. stem љме-, pres. љмѣм = *I know how*.

Note. The only other common verbs like this are пазљмети = *to understand*, pres. пазљмѣм, and смѣти = *to dare, to be allowed*, pres. смѣм. N.B. the 3rd pers. pl. of these three verbs ends, not in -у, cf. p. 103, but in -еју, e.g. љмејљ = *they know how*, пазљмејљ = *they understand*, смѣјљ = *they dare*.

It is important to notice that the verb смѣјати се = *to laugh* belongs to category III, 2 a (cf. p. 115), *I laugh* = смѣјѣм се, *they laugh* = смѣјљ се.

<sup>1</sup> N.B. Not all verbs in -ивати and -евати belong to this class, cf. умівати, p. 114, 144, пѣвати, p. 144.

## IV.

Connecting vowel -a- in both present and infinitive; the presents of these verbs were originally formed with the connecting syllables -aje-, which became contracted to -a- (cf. p. 103).

им-а-ти = *to have*, root им-, inf. and pres. stem има-, pres. имам = *I have*.

## V.

Connecting vowel -и-.

1. Infinitive and present endings joined to the root by -и-, e.g.

уч-и-ти = *to learn*, root уч-, inf. and pres. stem учи-, pres. учим = *I learn*.

2. Infinitive ending joined to the root by -е-, pres. endings by -и-, e.g.

вид-е-ти = *to see*, root вид-, inf. stem виде-, pres. stem види-, pres. видим = *I see*.

3. Infinitive ending joined to the root by -а-, pres. endings by -и-<sup>1</sup>; this -а- in the infinitive, and in those parts of the verb derived from it, was originally -е-, as in видети, but this was a long ē, which had the effect, when the root of such verbs ended in a guttural, of changing the guttural into a palatal consonant, while itself became а, e.g.

држ-а-ти = *to hold*, root држ-, inf. stem држа- (from дрг-ē), pres. stem држи-, pres. држим = *I hold*.

трч-а-ти = *to run*, root трч-, inf. stem трча- (from трк-ē), pres. stem трчи-, pres. трчим = *I run*.

When such roots ended in -зг-, -ск-, these groups now appear as -жд-, -шт-, e.g.

звіждати = *to whistle*, pres. звіждім from root звизг-.

<sup>1</sup> To this class also belongs formally заспати = *to fall asleep*, pres. заспим.

4. Infinitive ending joined by -a- to roots ending in -j, e.g.

бòj-а-ти се = *to fear*, root боj-, inf. stem боja-, pres. stem боји-, pres. бòjм се = *I am afraid*.

To this group also belong the verbs  
стàj-а-ти = *to stand*, root стаj- or croj-, inf. stem craja-, pres. stem стòји-, pres. стòjм = *I stand*.  
по-стòj-а-ти = *to exist*, pres. постòjм = *I exist*.

### Irregularities of the Verbs other than those already mentioned

1. дàти = *to give* has as present дàм,<sup>1</sup> дàш, дà, дàмо, дàре, дàду, i.e. except in the 3rd pers. pl. it follows the verbs of Class IV; but it also has another present, viz. дàдем, дàдеш, дàде, дàдемо, дàдере, дàду, and even another one according to Class II, viz. дàднèm. These are common colloquially.

2. знàти = *to know* has a regular present according to Class IV, viz. знàм (contracted from зна-ј-ем), but it also has a present formed on the analogy of дàдем, viz. знàдем.

3. имати = *to have* also has an alternative (colloquial) present similarly formed, viz. имàдем, and a perfective (cf. p. 34) present имаднем.

This verb when it is negated loses its initial и- and appears in the form:

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 1. (jâ) нèmām = <i>I have not</i>  | (мî) нèmāмо = <i>we have not</i>   |
| 2. (тî) нèmāш  | (вî) нèmāте  |
| 3. $\left. \begin{matrix} \text{òн} \\ \text{òна} \\ \text{òно} \end{matrix} \right\} \text{нèmā}$ | $\left. \begin{matrix} \text{òни} \\ \text{òне} \\ \text{òна} \end{matrix} \right\} \text{нèмаjу}$ |

<sup>1</sup> This is not contracted, like the verbs of Class IV, but is an old 'irregular' verb which has become assimilated to them.

## 112 THE FORMATION OF THE INFINITIVE

The 3rd pers. sing. is very common as an impersonal verb for construction, cf. p. 120, e.g.

ѡма = *there is, il-y-a, es gibt,*

нѡма = *there is not, il n'y a pas, es gibt nicht,*

and can also be used in the future and in the past, cf. p. 120.

4. ѡѡи = *to go* forms its present from a stem ид-, viz. идѡм, идѡш, идѡ, идѡмо, идѡте, идѡ. Its past part. act., from which is formed the (compound) past, is ѡшао, ѡшла, ѡшло, pl. ѡшли, ѡшле, ѡшла.

When this verb is compounded with prepositions (and in the process becomes perfective, cf. p. 123 f.), the initial и- disappears if the prefix ends in a vowel, e.g. дѡѡи = *to come* (from до + иѡи), pres. дѡѡѡм, &c., past дѡшао, &c., but it remains if the prefix ends in a consonant, e.g. отѡѡи = *to go away* (from од + иѡи, от is the older form of this preposition), pres. отѡѡѡм, which colloquially always is cut down to ѡдѡм, &c., past отѡшао, &c. Compounded with the prefix из- this verb has two forms, viz. изѡѡи = *to go out*, pres. изѡѡѡм, &c., and изѡѡи, pres. изѡѡѡм, &c., past изѡшао and изѡшла, &c.

5. ѡѡти = *to eat* was originally an 'irregular' verb like дѡти, and had as present ѡѡм, ѡѡш, ѡѡ, ѡѡмо, ѡѡте, ѡѡду, which is still occasionally used in the southern dialect, and even appears as ѡѡѡм, ѡѡѡш, ѡѡѡ, ѡѡѡмо, ѡѡѡте, ѡѡѡ, but has now been generally replaced by the forms ѡѡѡм, ѡѡѡш, ѡѡѡ, ѡѡѡмо, ѡѡѡте, ѡѡѡ, i.e. follows Class I, 1.

6. мѡѡи = *to be able*, cf. p. 103; the 2nd and 3rd pers. sing. and the 1st and 2nd pers. pl. of this verb, besides the regular forms мѡѡѡш, мѡѡѡ, &c., appear colloquially as мѡѡѡш, мѡѡѡ, мѡѡѡмо, мѡѡѡте.

7. *хѣти* (or *хѡтѣти*) = *to be willing, to want, to wish*, has an irregular present, viz. *хѡху, хѡхеш, хѡхе, хѡхемо, хѡхете, хѡхѣ* ; for the apocopated forms, cf. p. 73.

8. *бѣти* = *to be*, cf. pp. 31, 59, 73, 81, 91, but there is another verb, *бѣти* = *to strike, to hit*, which is conjugated exactly like *пѣти*, cf. p. 107, III, 1 a.

### Negations and Interrogations

In the negative forms of all verbs except *бѣти* (cf. p. 34), *хѣти* (cf. p. 74), and *ѣмати* (cf. p. 111) the negative particle *не* is put immediately before the verb, but is not joined to it, e.g.

(*жѣ*) *не трѣсѣм*, &c. = *I do not shake*.

(*жѣ*) *не ѹчѣм*, &c. = *I do not learn*.

But in the compound past and future the negative forms of *бѣти* and *хѣти* are used, and *не* is not added as well.

The interrogative is formed in all cases by putting the interrogative particle *ли* immediately after the verb. If the personal pronoun is retained, its place is after the interrogative particle, e.g.

*ѣмѣте ли (вѣ) ?* = *have you ?*

*трѣсете ли (вѣ) ?* = *are you shaking ?*

*учѣте ли (вѣ) ?* = *are you learning ?*

The question can be also formed by means of the other interrogative particles, such as *зѣ, дѣ, ли*, and also in the form of an assumption, cf. p. 33, the verb *to be* = *бѣти*.

In sentences which begin with an interrogative word no interrogative particle is necessary, cf. p. 34, e.g.

*штѣ (вѣ) учѣте ?* = *what are you learning ?*

*Whether* is rendered by *да ли*, and must never be translated, as colloquially in English, by *if*, e.g.

*Не знам да ли је код куће* = *I don't know whether (if) he is at home.*

## CHAPTER 20

## REFLEXIVE AND IMPERSONAL VERBS

In Serbian the ordinary active verbs may be transitive or intransitive. Many transitive verbs become intransitive by being made reflexive, that is, preceded or followed by *се*, which is the shortened form of the reflexive pronoun *себе*, cf. p. 55, e.g. *умивати*<sup>1</sup> = *to wash*, transitive, i.e. *to wash some one*, or *to wash the face or the hands*, *умивати се*<sup>1</sup> = *to wash*, intransitive, i.e. *to wash oneself*. In conjugation the pronoun *се* precedes or follows the verb according to whether the personal pronouns are used or not; the present of this verb would therefore be :

- Sing. 1. *ја се умивам*, or *умивам се* = *I wash (myself)*.  
 2. *ти се умиваш*, or *умиваш се*  
     *он се* }  
 3. *она се* } *умива*, or *умива се*  
     *оно се* }
- Pl. 1. *ми се умивамо*, or *умивамо се*  
 2. *ви се умивате*, or *умивате се*  
     *они се* }  
 3. *оне се* } *умивају*, or *умивају се*  
     *она се* }

<sup>1</sup> N.B. The perfective (cf. p. 125) form of this verb is *умити се*, which belongs to Class III, 1 *a*.



But there are certain intransitive verbs which are only reflexive, e.g. смѣјати се<sup>1</sup> = *to laugh*, cf. p. 107, III, 2 a, подсмѣвати се (+dat.) = *to laugh at*, дѣсити се and догòд-дѣтити се = *to happen*, задòцнити се = *to be late*, рýгати се = *to mock at*, смѣшпити се (+на +acc.) = *to smile (at)*, нáдати се = *to hope*, бòдјати се (+gen.) = *to fear*, чýдити се = *to be astonished*, шáлити се = *to joke*.

Other reflexive verbs are reflexive in a mutual sense, e.g. тýћи се (pres. тýчём се) = *to hit each other, to fight*, тýћи = *to hit somebody*, љýбити = *to kiss*, љýбити се = *to exchange kisses*.

Finally, a transitive verb used reflexively may be the equivalent of the passive, e.g.

тò се не гòворī = *that is not said* (lit. *that itself not say = one does not say that*).

òва књīга мнòго се чītā = *this book is much read*.

òве нòвине мáло се чītају = *this newspaper is little read*.

Cf. also pp. 196, 197.

When the reflexive verbs are negated the negative particle не must, as always, immediately precede the verb, e.g. jā се не ўмīвам or не ўмīвам се = *I do not wash*, jā се не смѣјём or не смѣјём се = *I am not laughing*, ђáци се не тýку = *the schoolboys are not fighting*.

Impersonal verbs are such as дѣсити се<sup>2</sup> and догòдѣтити се, of which the imperfective (cf. p. 121) forms are дешáвати се and догáђати се, e.g. штā се дѣсѣло (or догòдило, cf. above) ? = *what has happened?* чѣсто се дешáва (or дòгáђа) = *that often happens*; чīнити се = *to seem*, чīнī ми се = (1) *it seems to me*, (2) *I fancy*.

<sup>1</sup> смѣјати се на нѣкога = *to smile at some one*, смѣјати се нѣкоме = *to laugh at any one*.

<sup>2</sup> This is also sometimes used personally.

Expressions which in English are impersonal, e.g. *it is raining*, are rendered in Serbian as follows :

пада кѣша  
or њде кѣша  
or кѣша је

} = *it is raining* (lit. *falls rain, goes rain, rain is*).

пада снѣг  
or снѣг је

} = *it is snowing* (lit. *falls snow, snow is*).

кѣша лѣје (pres. of лѣти = *to pour*, like пѣти) = *it is pouring*  
(lit. *rain pours*).

ноћас је падала кѣша = *last night it rained*.

јуче је падала кѣша цѣо дан = *yesterday it rained all day*.

данас ће (неће) падати кѣша = *it will (it will not) rain to-day*.

мраз је  
or мрзне (pres. of мрзнути)

} = *it is freezing*, lit. *frost is, freezes*.

ноћас је био мраз = *last night it froze*, lit. *has been frost*.

било је мраза = *there has been a frost*, lit. *it was of frost*.

биће мраза = *it will freeze*, lit. *it will be of frost*.

ова река никад не мрзне = *this river never freezes*.

река је замрзла (past of замрзнути = *to get frozen*) = *the river has frozen over*.

грмети or грмити (ipfv., Class V, 2 or 1) = *to thunder*,<sup>1</sup> севати (Class IV) = *to lighten*.

On the other hand, expressions which in English are personal, e.g. *I am cold*, are in Serbian impersonal, e.g.

(х)ладно ми је = *I am cold*, lit. *cold to me is*.

топло ми је = *I am warm*, lit. *warm to me is*.

врућина ми је = *I am hot*, lit. *heat to me is*.

These expressions without the pers. pron. become impersonal, e.g.

<sup>1</sup> A thunderstorm is грмљавина = *thunder* ; other words for storm are олуја and бура. *Lightning* is муња.

вру́йна је = *it is hot*, lit. *heat is*.

(*I am hungry* = гла́дан сам, and *I am thirsty* = же́дан сам, i.e. are personal in both languages.)

Other very common impersonal expressions are :

жа́о ми је = *I am sorry*, lit. *pity to me is*.

жа́о ми га је = *I am sorry for him*, lit. *pity to me of him is*.

ò, ка́ко ми је жа́о = *oh, how sorry I am*, lit. *oh, how to me is pity*.

штѣ́та је = *it is a pity* (this is followed by што = *that*).

ка́ква штѣ́та = *what a pity*.

мй́ло ми је } = *I am glad*, lit. *dear to me is*.  
дра́го ми је }

бы́ло ми је вр́ло прй́јатно, штò . . . = *I was very glad that*,  
lit. *to me was very pleasant that . . .*

бы́ће ми ве́дма мй́ло, прй́јатно = *I shall be very glad*.

тре́ба = *it is necessary*; this is used impersonally with the infinitive, with the dative of the personal pronoun, or followed by да = *that*; its use as a personal verb, e.g. тре́бам, is common but is considered incorrect, and is unnecessary as the verb мо́рати = *to be obliged*, мо́рам = *I must* (followed by да = *that*, e.g. мо́рам да й́дѣм = *I must go*), can always be used. Тре́ба can be used in the pres., past, or future, as follows :

то́ тре́ба одмах ура́дити (or учй́нити or свр́шити) = *it is necessary to do that at once* = *that must be done*.

то́ тре́ба дан́ас да свр́шимо = *we must do that to-day*, lit. . . . *that we do that to-day or get that done*, свр́шити, lit. = *to finish*.

шт́а вам тре́ба? = *what do you need?*

тре́ба ми (је́дан) но́ж, (је́дна) ка́шика и (је́дно) пе́ро = *I need a knife, a spoon, and a pen*, or the adjective по́требан = *needful* can be used: по́требан ми је но́ж, по́требна ми је ка́шика, по́требно ми је пе́ро.

With divisible matter only трѣба is used, followed by the genitive, e.g.

трѣба ми (х)ѧртије = *I require some paper.*

пѣтребно (н.) can also be used impersonally like трѣба, e.g.

пѣтребно је да ђдѣре (cf. p. 123) у Лѣндѣн = *you must go (it is necessary for you to go) to London.*

нѣжно је = *it is necessary*, and is similarly used.

трѣба used in the past = *ought to have*, e.g. трѣбало је да ђдѣм јѣчѣ у Лѣндѣн ѧли нѣсам мѣгао = *I ought to have gone to London yesterday, but I could not; but I had to go to London yesterday = мѣгао сам јѣчѣ да ѣдѣм у Лѣндѣн.*

зѧ тѣ ѣе нам трѣбати (or трѣба ѣе нам зѧ тѣ) мнѣго нѣвца = *we shall need a lot of money for that.*

ѣѧлити<sup>1</sup> = *to lack*, e.g. мѧло ѣѧли па да пѧднѣм = *little is wanting but that I fall = I nearly fell.*

Otherwise *must* is very commonly rendered by the intransitive verb мѣрати, мѣрѧм = *I must, I have to*, мѣрао сам = *I had to*, мѣраѣу = *I shall have to*, usually followed by да = *that*, мѣрамо сѣтра да ѣдѣмо (or ђдѣмо) у Лѣндѣн = *we have to go to London to-morrow*, мѣрали смо јѣчѣ тѣ да ѣрѧдимо = *we had to do that yesterday*, мѣраѣемо сѣтра тѣ да ѣрѧдимо = *we shall have to do that to-morrow; have to* has also a literal equivalent in Serbian, viz. ѣмати да, e.g. вѣ ѣмѧте да свѣршите тѧј пѣцао дѧнѧс = *you have to (you must) finish that work to-day*, though it is not quite such a strong expression as in English.

мѧрити = *to care about*, e.g. нѣ мѧрѣм за вѣно = *I don't care about wine*, ѣн нѣ мѧрѣ нѣ за шта = *he does not care about anything or he does not worry about anything*, but it is

<sup>1</sup> From the German *fehlen*, not to be confused with ѣѧла, from хвѧла = *thanks*.

very commonly used impersonally in the phrase *ништа то не ма̑ри*, or *не ма̑ри ништа* = *it does not matter at all*. *брига* = *care, worry*, is used in impersonal expressions such as *то ми је велика брига* = *that is a great worry to me*, also ironically *брига ми је за то* = *a lot I worry about that*.

Another very common impersonal expression is *ва̑ла* (*inf.* *ва̑лати*, *ipfv.*, Class IV), derived from the Italian *vaglia* = (1) *it is worth*, (2) *it is worth while, it is important, one must, one ought*, e.g.

*ов̑ај ко̑н ва̑ла две хиљаде динара̑* = *this horse is worth*<sup>1</sup>  
2,000 *dinars* (francs), *то ништа не ва̑ла* = *that is worth-  
less, no good*.

*ва̑ла да*<sup>2</sup> *одете данас у позориште* = *you ought to go to the  
theatre to-day (it is worth your while)*.

*не ва̑ла то да радите* = *you ought not to do that (don't do that,  
it is not right)*.

*не ва̑ла радити недељом* = *it is not right to work on Sundays  
(inst. sing. of недеља)*.

It can also be used personally, e.g.

*данас ништа не ва̑лам* = *I am no good to-day (sc. in health)*.

Used of food this verb means *to be good*, e.g.

*ва̑ла ли ов̑ај сир ?* = *is this cheese good (= in good condition) ?*  
*ва̑ла !* = *it is !* *две кру̑шке не ва̑лају* = *these pears are  
not good*.

Other impersonal verbs are :

*сврбети* = *to itch* (like *видети*, cf. p. 110, V, 2), e.g. *сврби ме  
око* = *my eye itches*.

*голицати* = *to tickle* (trans.), e.g. *нешто ме голиц̑а у гр̑лу* =  
*something is tickling me in my throat*.

<sup>1</sup> *врѣди* (3rd pers. sing. pres. from *врѣдити*) is also commonly used for *is worth*.

<sup>2</sup> The form *ва̑ла* (= *ва̑ла + да . . .*) = *perhaps*.

штѹцати се = *to hiccough*, e.g. штѹцā ми се = *I have got the hiccoughs*.

гāдити се = *to feel sick*, e.g. гāдї ми се = *I feel sick*, also figuratively гāдї ми се на њєга = *I loathe him*.

мѹка ми је also = *I feel sick* (lit. *torment to me is*). But *to be sick (to vomit)* is rendered by the transitive verb пōвраћати = *to bring back*, e.g. сїнōћ сам пōвраћао = *I was sick in the night*.

пōвраћати се = *to return*; this verb, besides being used literally in such phrases as грōзница се пōвраћа = *fever returns*, is also used in the meaning of гāдити се.

бōлети = *to ache* (like вїдети), e.g. бōлї ме глава, зѹб, стōмāк, &c. = *my head, tooth, stomach aches*.

тїпати се = *to concern*, e.g. штō се тїче мєне (*gen.*) = *as far as I am concerned*.

дōпадати се (*ipfv.*), дōпасти се (*pfv.*) = *to please*, cf. p. 207.

мирїсати = *to smell* (trans. + acc., also intrans.), e.g. овā рѹжа дївно мїрише = *this rose smells beautiful* (but also мїришєм рѹжу = *I smell the rose*).

знāчити = *to signify*, штā знāчи овō = *what does this mean?*

їма = *there is*, нєма = *there is not*, cf. p. 137.

When followed by a noun denoting divisible matter, їмā takes the genitive, e.g. їмā ли шєкєра? = *is there any sugar?* but if reference is made to one particular thing it takes the nominative, e.g. у овōј вāроши їмā врло лєпа црквā = *in this town there is a very beautiful church*.

Нєма usually takes the gen., but cf. p. 138.

This can also be used in the future and in the past, viz. їмāкє and нєкє їмати, їмало је and нїје їмало, though in these cases the use of the verb бїти in the same sense is commoner, e.g. хōкє ли вечєрāс бїти хлєба? = *will there be bread this evening?* нєкє (бїти) = *there will not (be)*,

је ли било много света у позоришту? = *were there many people in the theatre?* било је = *there were*.

There is no exact Serbian equivalent to the English *one*, which can be rendered by the 3rd pers. sing. of a reflexive verb, e.g. *tô se не каже* (cf. p. 115) = *one does not say that*, *не може се рећи* = *one cannot tell*, *не зна се* = *one does not know*, or by such expressions as *човек* = *man*, *сваки* (or *свако*) = *every one*, *не мари сваки то да ради* = *one does not care to do that*, *човек никад не зна шта ће га снаћи* = *one never knows what is going to happen to one*.

The phrase *they say* is rendered by *кажу* or *веле*, without the personal pronoun, cf. pp. 134, 209.

*Cost*: *кољико кошта овô?* = *how much does this cost?*

*It is possible* = *могуће* (je); *impossible* = *немогуће* or *није могуће*, also *можда* (= *perhaps*, contracted from *може да* and requiring a continuation, e.g. *можда је тако* = *perhaps it is so*) and *може бити* or *не може бити*.

*It is probable* = *вероватно* (je), *improbable* = *невероватно*.

*It is forbidden* = (1) *забрањено је*, (2) *није слободно*, (3) *не сме се*.

*It is allowed* = (1) *слободно је*, (2) *сме се*.

## CHAPTER 21

### THE ASPECTS OF THE VERB: THEIR MEANING, FORMATION, AND USE

In Serbian, as in the other Slavonic languages, almost every verb exists in two forms or *aspects*, which are generally known as *imperfective* and *perfective*, and which are used according to the nature of the action expressed by the verb.

The *aspects* are varieties of the same verb which express varieties of the same action. The imperfective aspect is used

to express an action whose completion is not foreseen, which is still in progress, which usually takes some time, or which frequently recurs in the past, present, or future. The perfective aspect is used to express an action which has been completed, whose completion is definitely foreseen, though it may not actually occur, which is single or instantaneous or momentary, or which has only just begun.

Which verbs are imperfective and which perfective can only be learned by practice, but there are certain categories and characteristics of verbs which help one in recognizing the aspect.

Simple verbs, i.e. verbs not compounded with prepositions, may be of either aspect, but the majority of them are imperfective, e.g. йћи = *to go*, ўчити = *to learn*, ймати = *to have*, пйти = *to drink*, звати = *to call*, are all imperfective, i.e. they denote processes which are still going on or were, are, or will be of uncertain duration.

Examples of simple verbs which are perfective are кўпйти = *to buy* (a particular thing or particular things at a particular time), рёћи = *to tell* (one particular thing), бацйти = *to fling* (once), стайти = *to come to a stop*, дайти = *to give* (a particular thing once), and very many of the verbs of Class II, e.g. дйгнути = *to lift*, мёгнути = *to put* (cf. p. 106).

Simple imperfective verbs, when they are compounded with prepositional prefixes (and thereby become compound verbs), become perfective, the effect of the prefix being to define more closely, to limit or to alter the activity denoted by the verb, e.g.

обййћи = *to go round* (a particular thing once), наўчити = *to learn completely*, пйпйти or йспйти = *to drink up, to drink completely*, пйзвати = *to invite* (on a particular occasion).



Needless to say, each of these verbs can also be compounded with other prepositional prefixes, each of which imparts to the verb a different meaning. There follows a list of the prepositional prefixes in alphabetical order :

до = <i>up to, until</i>	пре = <i>across</i>
за = <i>for</i>	пред = <i>before</i>
из = <i>out</i>	при = <i>to (close to)</i>
на = <i>on</i>	про = <i>past, through</i>
над = <i>over</i>	раз = <i>asunder, apart, also am-</i> <i>plifies the action of a verb</i>
о or об = <i>round</i>	с or со = (1) <i>with</i> , (2) <i>down</i> <i>from</i>
од = <i>from</i>	у = <i>in, into</i>
по = <i>generally limits the ac-</i> <i>tivity denoted by the verb</i>	уз = <i>up</i>
под = <i>under</i>	

Not every verb, of course, is used in composition with *all* of these prefixes, but the verb *идти* can be compounded with all of them except one (*пред*), when the following list is obtained (the verb itself occasionally changing in appearance in the process, cf. p. 112) :

до́йти ( <i>inf.</i> ), до́йдем ( <i>pres.</i> ), до́шао ( <i>past part.</i> )	= <i>to come.</i>
за́йти, за́йдем, за́шао	} = <i>to go behind, to go deeply into</i> <i>(literally and figuratively).</i>
зай́ти, зай́дем, зай́шао	
изы́ти, изы́йдем, изы́шао	} = <i>to go out.</i>
иза́йти, иза́йдем, иза́шао	
на́йти, на́йдем, на́шао	= <i>to find.</i>
най́ти, най́дем, най́шао	= <i>to come upon, to come suddenly.</i>
нады́ти, нады́йдем, нады́шао	= <i>to come on from above.</i>
обы́ти, обы́йдем, обы́шао	= <i>to go round.</i>
оды́ти, оды́йдем, оды́шао	= <i>to go down (of water).</i>
оты́ти, оты́йдем (or о́ддем), оты́шао	= <i>to go away.</i>
по́йти, по́йдем, по́шао	= <i>to start off.</i>
поды́ти, поды́йдем, поды́шао	= <i>to come under, to approach.</i>

прѣћи, прѣђѣм, прѣшао = *to go across or over.*

прићи, приђѣм, пришао = *to approach.*

прѣћи, прѣђѣм, прѣшао = *to go past.*

разйћи се, разйђу се (3rd pers. pl.), разйшли су се (3rd pers. pl. of the past tense) = *to go apart.*

сйћи, сйђѣм, сйшао = *to come down from.*

йћи, йђѣм, йшао = *to come into, to go into.*

узйћи, узйђѣм, узйшао = *to go up on to.*

All these verbs are perfective.

It is necessary to say that very frequently these prefixes lose their original meaning in composition, and acquire secondary meanings, e.g. with the verb *стати* (cf. p. 106 ; N.B. simple verbs which are already perfective remain perfective in composition) :

застати = *to stop for a moment.*

настати = *to set in* (of the weather, seasons, times).

џстати = *to remain.*

пџстати = *to become, to grow.*

прџстати = *to cease.*

пристати = (1) *to agree*, (2) *to moor* (of a ship, intrans.).

растати се = *to part company with.*

састати се = *to meet, to come together.*

йстати (from *уз + стати*) = *to get up.*

Verbs may be compounded with more than one preposition, of course remaining perfective, e.g.

снайћи from *с + на + йћи*) = *to befall.*

произййћи (or произаййћи) = *to proceed from.*

превазййћи (from *пре + уз + ййћи*) = *to excel.*

сйстати (from *с + у + стати*) = *to get very tired.*

Examples of verbs compounded with the prefix *пред-*, and perfective, are :

предвидети = *to foresee*.

претска́зати = *to foretell*.

предло́жити = *to propose*.

претста́вити = *to introduce, to represent*.

It often happens that *one* prefix in making the verb perfective loses some or all of its original meaning, while the other prefixes compounded with the same verb retain it; *по-* generally limits or defines the activity denoted by the verb without altering its meaning, e.g. *їсти* (*ipfv.*) = *to eat*, *пое́сти* (*pfv.*) = *to eat up something*; *сла́ти* (*ipfv.*) = *to send*, *посла́ти* (*pfv.*) = *to send (a particular thing once)*, *че́кати* (*ipfv.*) = *to wait*, *поче́кати* (or *оче́кати*, both *pfv.*) = *to wait a bit*; but occasionally other prefixes also *merely* make the verb perfective, and no rule can be given as regards these, e.g. *пи́сати* (*ipfv.*) = *to write*, *напи́сати* (*pfv.*) = *to write a particular thing or things, to get written*; *пи́тати* (*ipfv.*, Class IV) = *to ask*, *запи́тати* or *упи́тати* (*pfv.*) = *to ask a single question*; *гра́дити* (*ipfv.*) = *to build*,<sup>1</sup> *сгра́дити* (*pfv.*) = *to get built, to finish building*.

When a simple imperfective verb has been made perfective by the addition of a prefix, which retains its own meaning and alters that of the verb, *and* it is necessary to use this verb in an imperfective sense, *then* imperfective verbs are formed, with the retention of the prefix and altered meaning, by lengthening or otherwise changing the stem, e.g.

*зва́ти* (*ipfv.*) = *to call*, *позва́ти* (*pfv.*) = *to invite (once)*,  
*позива́ти* (*ipfv.*, Class IV) = *to invite (frequently, or merely imperfectively, cf. p. 122)*.

*говори́ти* (*ipfv.*) = *to speak*, *одговори́ти* (*pfv.*) = *to answer*,  
*одговара́ти* (*ipfv.*, Class IV) = *to answer*.

<sup>1</sup> A building is *грађевина* or *зграда*.

б'йти (*ipfv.*) = *to hit, to beat*, убити (*pfv.*) = *to kill*, pres.

убијем, убијати (*ipfv.*, Class IV, pres. убијам) = *to kill*.

кр'йти (*ipfv.*) = *to hide* (pres. кр'їјем), покрити (*pfv.*) = *to cover*, покр'ивати (*ipfv.*, pres. покр'ивам) = *to cover*.

ч'екати (*ipfv.*) = *to wait*, дочекати (*pfv.*) = *to receive people, to wait till they come*, дочекивати (*ipfv.*, Class III, 3) = *to receive people*.

мо'ћи (*ipfv.*, cf. p. 112) = *to be able*, помо'ћи (*pfv.*, cf. p. 106) = *to help*, помагати (*ipfv.*) = *to help* (Class III, 2 b).

пи́сати (*ipfv.*) = *to write*, опи́сати (*pfv.*) = *to describe*, опис'ивати (*ipfv.*, Class III, 3) = *to describe*.

ви́дети (may be either *ipfv.* or *pfv.*) = *to see*, пр'едвидети (*pfv.*) = *to foresee*, предви́жати (*ipfv.*, Class IV) = *to foresee*.

у́чити (*ipfv.*) = *to learn*, изу́чити (*pfv.*) = *to learn thoroughly, to finish learning*, изуч'авати (*ipfv.*) = *to be occupied in learning thoroughly*.

Such series cannot always be formed, e.g. ўмети (*ipfv.*) = *to know how*, разўмети (*ipfv.*) = *to understand*, подразум'евати се (*ipfv.*) = *to be implied*, разум'евати (*ipfv.*) and подразум'ети are seldom used.

From other verbs again such series can be formed to almost any extent, e.g. from пи́сати (*ipfv.*) = *to write*, потпи́сати (*pfv.*), потпис'ивати (*ipfv.*) = *to sign*, препи́сати (*pfv.*), препис'ивати (*ipfv.*) = (1) *to copy out*, (2) *to prescribe*, запи́сати (*pfv.*), запис'ивати (*ipfv.*) = *to make a note or notes*.

Such verbs as these compound imperfective verbs are usually known as *frequentative* verbs, but they are by no means always used with frequentative meaning, cf. p. 128.

It was mentioned on p. 122 that there are also simple verbs which are perfective; these usually have simple verbs corresponding to them in meaning which are imperfective,

are derived from the same root, but are of a different formation and class, e.g.

кúпити (pfv., Class V), купòвати (ipfv., Class III, 3) = *to buy*; бáцити (pfv., Class V), бáцати (ipfv., Class IV) = *to throw*; дáти (pfv., Class IV), дáвати (ipfv., Class III, 2a) = *to give*. To this category of verbs also belong those perfective verbs of Class II which are called *instantaneous*, e.g.

мèтнути (pfv.), мèтати (ipfv., Class III, 2 b) = *to put*.

дйгнуги (pfv.), дйзати (ipfv., Class III, 2 b) = *to lift*.

When such simple perfective verbs are compounded with a prefix they naturally remain perfective, *but* the simple imperfective verbs corresponding to them in meaning, when compounded with a prefix, *remain imperfective*, e.g.

дòдати (pfv.), додáвати (ipfv.) = (1) *to add*, (2) *to pass a thing*, e.g. *at table*.

зàдати (pfv.), задáвати (ipfv.) = *to give figuratively*, e.g. *trouble* (мýку), *to inflict a defeat* (ýдáр), *a wound* (рáну).

йздати (pfv.), издáвати (ipfv.) = (1) *to give up*, e.g. *a criminal*, (2) *to publish, to edit*.

прèдати (pfv.), предáвати (ipfv.) = (1) *to hand over, to transmit*, (2) *to teach, to lecture* (used reflexively = *to surrender*).

прйдати (pfv.), придáвати (ipfv.) = *to impart*.

прòдати (pfv.), продáвати (ipfv.) = *to sell*.

рáздати (pfv.), рáздáвати (ipfv.) = *to distribute*.

ýдати се (pfv.), удáвати се (ipfv.) = *to get married*, N.B. only of women,<sup>1</sup> ýдати or удáвати, transitive = *to give away in marriage*.

пýстити (pfv.), пýштати (ipfv.) = *to let go*.

допýстити (pfv.), допýштати (ipfv.) = *to allow, to permit*.

<sup>1</sup> *To marry*, of men, is ожèнити се (pfv.).

But frequently compound imperfective verbs of one of the other formations are preferred, e.g. одба́цяти (*pfv.*) = *to fling away*, but одба́цѣвати (*ipfv.*, Class IV) is much commoner than одба́цяти; similarly потку́пити (*pfv.*) = *to bribe*, has *ipfv.* потку́пѣвати, Class IV.

From the verbs of Class II, e.g.

по́дметнути (*pfv.*), по́дметати (*ipfv.*) = (1) *to put under*, (2) *to allege*.

по́дигнути (*pfv.*, from под + дигнути), по́дизати (*ipfv.*) = (1) *to pick up*, (2) *to bring up* (e.g. a child), (3) *to erect*.

As regards verbs of this class (II, with infinitives in -нути) it is important to notice that while many of them are perfective 'instantaneous', like those just mentioned, others denote a gradual process and are imperfective, e.g. мр́знути = *to get frozen*, a perfective of which would be, e.g. про́мрзнути = *to get frozen through and through*.

There are some verbs one or both of which are never used in their simple form in either aspect, but have numerous compounds, some of which are imperfective and others perfective, e.g.

у́зѣти (*pfv.*, cf. p. 105), у́зимати (*ipfv.*, Class IV, really a compound of ймати) = *to take*.

о́тѣти (*pfv.*), о́тимати (*ipfv.*) = *to take away by force*.

зау́зѣти (*pfv.*), зау́зимати (*ipfv.*) = *to occupy*.

до́нѣти (*pfv.*, cf. pp. 105, 106), до́нѣсити (*ipfv.*, Class V) = *to bring* (the simple verb нѣсити, *ipfv.*, Class V = *to carry*).

о́днѣти (*pfv.*), о́днѣсити (*ipfv.*) = *to carry away*.

по́чѣти (*pfv.*, cf. p. 105), по́чињати (*ipfv.*, Class III, 2 a) = *to begin* (trans. or intrans.).

обја́снити (*pfv.*, Class V, 1), обја́шњавати (*ipfv.*, Class IV) = *to explain* (јасан = *clear*).

обе́кати (*pfv.*, Class IV), обе́кати (*ipfv.*, Class IV) = *to promise* (обе́ка́ње = *a promise*).

оста́ти (*pfv.*, compound of ста́ти, cf. pp. 107, 124), оста́јати (*ipfv.*, Class III, 2 a) = *to remain*.

посе́тити (*pfv.*, Class V, 1), посе́ћивати (*ipfv.*, Class IV) = *to visit, to attend (school)* (посе́та = *a visit*).

по́кушати (*pfv.*, Class IV), покуша́вати (*ipfv.*, Class IV) = *to try, to attempt* (по́кушај = *an attempt*).

пресе́стати (*pfv.*), пресе́стати (*ipfv.*) = *to cease*.

посе́стати (*pfv.*), посе́стати (*ipfv.*) = *to grow, to become*.

при́знати (*pfv.*, compound of зна́ти, cf. p. 143), призна́вати (*ipfv.*, Class III, 2 a) = *to admit, to confess*.

са́знати or до́знати (*pfv.*), сазна́вати or дозна́вати (*ipfv.*) = *to find out, to discover, to learn*, sometimes with differentiation of meaning, по́знати (*pfv.*) = *to recognize people*, позна́вати (*ipfv.*) = *to know personally*.<sup>1</sup>

Special mention must be made of the verb и́ћи = *to go* and its compounds; as explained on p. 123 f., these latter are all *perfective*; their corresponding *imperfectives* are formed from a totally different root, viz. -лазити, e.g. до́лазити (Class V, 1) = *to come constantly*, за́лазити = *to set (of the sun)*, зайла́зити = *to go deeply into*, и́злазити or изы́лазити = *to go out continuously* (cf. и́злаз = *exit*), на́лазити = (1) *to find*, (2) *to consider*, найла́зити = *to come upon often*, обы́лазити = (1) *to go round often*, (2) *to visit frequently*, одла́зити = (1) *to go away often*, (2) *to visit often*, по́лазити = *to start* (e.g. of the train, i.e. regularly, though this verb is also used of a single action in phrases such as ка́д по́лазите? = *when do you start?*), у́лаз or у́лазак = *entrance*, &c.

ле́ћи (pres. ле́гнем, Class I and II), *pfv.* = *to lie down*, has *ipfv.* ле́жати (pres. ле́жѝм, Class V, 2) = *to lie, to be*

<sup>1</sup> An acquaintance is по́знаник (*masc.*), по́знаница (*fem.*).

*lying*, with which is connected *положити* (*pfv.*, Class V, 1); the simple *ipfv.* verb *ложити* is only used of *laying the fire* and *полагати* (*ipfv.*, Class III, 2 b, pres. *полажѣм*) = *to lay, to place*, cf. below.

*сѣсти* (pres. *сѣднѣм*, Class I and II), *pfv.* = *to sit down*, has *ipfv.* *сѣдети* (pres. *сѣдѣм*, Class V, 2) = *to sit*.

*помѣћи* (pres. *помогнѣм*, Class I and II), *pfv.* = *to help*, has *ipfv.* *помѣгати* (pres. *помѣжѣм*, Class III, 2 b).

### Examples of the use of the Aspects

The difference in meaning between an imperfective and a perfective infinitive has already been indicated; a few more examples follow:

*можете ли доћи сѹтра?* = *can you come to-morrow?* (i.e. one particular occasion); *ѡко хѡћете могу долазити свѡкога дѡна* = *if you like I can come every day* (gen. of time when); *нѣмѡм мѡстила, нѣ могу писати* = *I have no ink, I cannot write*; *можете ли му написати нѣколико рѣчѣй?* = *can you write him a few words?* (with definition of what has to be written); *полагати (ipfv.) ѣспит* = *to go in for an examination*; *положити (pfv.) ѣспит* = *to pass an examination successfully*.

As regards the present tense, the general rule is that, to describe any action which is in actual progress, or which is frequently repeated, the present of the *imperfective* verb must be used; the present of a *perfective* verb is most frequently used (1) in subordinate clauses, which may refer to actual or hypothetical facts in the past or in the future, (2) in narration, like the 'historic present' in English, to describe vividly events in the past (this includes the use in principal sentences of the presents of such instantaneous



verbs as метнути, бацити); examples of the *imperfective* present are :

шта радите?—пишем писма=*what are you doing?*—*I am writing letters*; ја пишем много писамā=*I write many letters*; где купујете цигарете?=*where do you buy cigarettes?* редовно примам српске новине=*I get (receive) Serbian newspapers regularly* (примати, *ipfv.*, Class IV); воз (or влак) полази у седам сати=*the train starts (sc. regularly or on a particular day) at 7 o'clock*; одлазите ли често у позориште?=*do you often go to the theatre?*

Examples of the *perfective* present are :

треба данас да напишете ово писмо=*it is necessary that you write this letter to-day* (=you must write); морам данас да купим цигарете=*I must buy cigarettes to-day*; не могу то данас да урадим=*I cannot do that to-day*; можете ли да дођете сутра?=*can you come to-morrow?* хоћете ли да одемо данас у позориште?=*shall we go (lit. do you wish that we go . . .) to the theatre to-day?* да ли би(сте) хтели (cf. pp. 33, 82) да одемо . . .?=*would you like to go?*

In all such sentences as these, although it would be possible to use the *perfective* infinitive, viz. написати, урадити, купити, доћи, отићи, it is far more colloquial to resolve this into a subordinate clause introduced by да=*that*; this tendency is one of the chief peculiarities of Serbian syntax (cf. pp. 118, 209). Other examples are :

радоваћу се ако сутра дођете=*I shall be glad if you come to-morrow*; кад купите књигу пошаљите ми је=*when you buy the book send it me*.

It must be understood that if the verb in the subordinate clause denotes an *imperfective* action it is of course itself

imperfective, e.g. зăр нѣ видѣте да пѣшѣм ? = *do you not see that I am writing ?*

An example of the 'historic present' :

ја ђдѣм у Лондон, нађѣм свѣга пријатеља, одвѣдѣм (pres. of одвести, Class I, 1) га у пѡзорѣште, зăтѣм се вратѣм у хѡтел, ѱђѣм ѱ собу, мѣтнѣм капѣт на стѡлицу и бăцѣм се на пѡстељу мрѣав ѱмѡран = *I go off to London, find my friend, take him to the theatre, then return to (my) hotel, go into (my) room, put (my) coat on the chair, and fling myself on the bed dead tired.*

The use of the two aspects in the future and in the past corresponds closely to their use in the infinitive ; examples of the imperfective future are : пѣсаћу му = *I am going to write to him* (not specifying when or what), пѣсаћу му да дѡђѣ = *I shall write to him to come* (sc. at some time), дѡлазићу вам чѣсто = *I shall often come to (see) you* ; if such imperfective future actions are expressed by a subordinate clause, the imperfective present must be used, e.g. штă ћемо тăмо да рăдимо ? = *what are we going to do there ?*

Examples of the perfective future are : данăс ћу му написати писмо = *I shall write him a (or the) letter to-day* ; ѡко мѡгу (or мѡгнем, cf. p. 106), дѡћи ћу сѣтра = *if I can I shall come to-morrow.*

Examples of the imperfective past are : рăнијѣ сам пѣсао мнѡго пѣсамă = *formerly I used to write many letters* ; кад је ѱшао ѱ собу ја сам чѣтао нѡвине = *when he came into the room I was reading a (or the) newspaper* ; јѣсте ли чѣтăли ѡвѣ књѣгу ? = *have you (ever) read this book ?* свăкога лѣта ѡдлазили смо на мѡре = *every summer* (gen. of time when) *we used to go to the seaside* ; штă сте рăдили кад је бѡмба пăла (past of пăсти, pfv., root пад-, Class I and II) = *what were you doing when the bomb fell ?*

Examples of the perfective past are : *dānās sam napísaο* десет писамā = *to-day I have written ten letters* ; *a jučē sam napísaο pětнаест* = *and yesterday I wrote fifteen* ; *jēste li prōčitāli ōvū knīgu* ? = *have you finished this book* ? *prōšlōga lēta ōtišli smo na mōre* = *last summer we went to the seaside* ; *штā сте урадили кад је бѹмба пāла* ? = *what did you do when the bomb fell* ?

The *imperative* is similarly used in *commands*, e.g. *пишите ми* = *write me* (sc. *more than once*) ; *напишите му дānās писмо* = *write him a (or the) letter to-day* ; *читāјте српске нѹвине* = *read the Serbian newspapers* ; *прочитāјте ōvū knīgu* = *read this book (and finish it)* ; *чините што гѹд хѹћете* = *do whatever you like* ; *учините or урадите тѹ дānās* = *do that to-day* ; *дѹлазите рѹдѹвно* = *come regularly* ; *дѹђите вечѹрас* = *come this evening*.

In *prohibitions* the perfective imperative is scarcely ever used ; these are expressed by either the imperfective imperative or by *nēmōj* (*sing.*), *nēmōјте* (*pl.*), followed by the imperfective infinitive or by a subordinate clause, e.g. *не пишите му or нēmōјте му писати* = *do write to him* ; *нēmōјте тѹ да рāдите* = *don't do that* ; the *přv. imperative* is used in a few such phrases as *не забѹравите (ме)* = *don't forget (me)* ; *не забѹравите то да ўрāдите* = *don't forget to do that* (*забѹравити, přv., Class V, 1*).

As regards the use of the two aspects in the other tenses, there is no difficulty with the *imperfect*, because this tense can only be formed from *imperfective verbs*. The *aoist* on the other hand may be formed from verbs of either aspect, though the *aoist* of *perfective verbs* is naturally much the commoner of the two ; the *aoist* of an *imperfective verb* denotes an action of short or limited duration in the past, e.g. *ўстаде* (3rd pers. sing. *aoist* of *ўстати, přv.* = *to get*

*up*), чита (3rd pers. sing. aorist of читати, *ipfv.* = *to read*) мало и писа (3rd pers. sing. aorist of писати, *ipfv.* = *to write*), па онда изађе (3rd pers. sing. aorist of изаћи, *pfv.* = *to go out*) љ поље = *he got up, read a little and wrote, and then went out.*

### Verbs of two Aspects.

Some verbs are regarded as being of both aspects, e.g. видети = *to see*; чути = *to hear*, e.g. видим га = *I see him*; ако га видите кажите му да дође = *if you see him tell him to come*; чујете ли грмљавину? = *do you hear the thunder?* кад чујете мој глас, уђите = *when you hear my voice, come in.* This applies also to the present and the imperative of казати = *to say, to tell*, though otherwise this is regarded as a perfective verb with the corresponding imperfective казивати (Class III, 3, cf. показати, *pfv.*, показивати, *ipfv.* = *to show*), e.g. шта кажете? = *what do you say?* не знам шта да кажем = *I don't know what to say*; како да кажем? = *how (or what) shall I say?*

The same applies to the verb велѣм, Class V, 2, which has no infinitive, and is frequently used as a synonym of кажем, e.g. шта велите? (more colloquial) = *шта кажете?* ако ви велите, ја ћу доћи = *if you say (sc. you want me to), I shall come.*

The aspects may also be divided into the following five categories :

### I. IMPERFECTIVE

1. Continuous, e.g. сѣдети, Class V, 2 = *to sit (to be sitting)*; лѣтети, Class V, 2 = *to fly (to be flying)*.
2. Frequentative or iterative, e.g. сѣдати, Class IV = *to sit down frequently*; потскакивати, Class III, 3 = *to keep jumping up*.

## II. PERFECTIVE

1. Momentary or instantaneous, e.g. мѣтнути, Class II = *to put*; скѣдчити, Class V, 1 = *to give a jump*.

2. Final, indicating the completion of an action, e.g. поцрнѣти, Class V, 2 = *to become black (or dark)*.

3. Inceptive, indicating the commencement of an action, e.g. по́чи, Class I, 1 = *to start*; полѣтѣти, Class V, 2 = *to fly off*; за́певати, Class IV = *to break into song*; засмѣјати се, Class III, 2 a = *to break into laughter*; заплакати, Class III, 2 b = *to burst into tears*.

## CHAPTER 22

## PRONOUNS DECLINED LIKE ADJECTIVES

## AND THE USE OF THE PRESENT TENSE OF

## TO HAVE

Sing.	овàкàв (m.), овàкàвā (f.), овàкàвō (n.)	} = <i>like this, of this kind</i>
Pl.	овàкàвī (m.), овàкàвē (f.), овàкàвā (n.)	
also	овàкī (m.), овàкā (f.), овàкō (n.)	
	овàкī (m.), овàкē (f.), овàкā (n.)	
тàкàв }	<i>like that, of that kind</i>	оволīки = <i>of this size</i>
тàкī }	<i>kind</i>	толīки = <i>of that size</i>
онàкàв }	<i>like that (yonder), of that kind (yonder)</i>	онолīки = <i>of that size (yonder)</i>
онàкī }	<i>that kind (yonder)</i>	

They are declined in two different ways; those ending in -и, e.g. овàкī, тàкī, are declined like the definite adjectives, cf. жўти, p. 65; the others, e.g. овàкàв, тàкàв, like the indefinite adjectives, cf. жўт, p. 64.

The *neuter singular* of all these pronouns can be used adverbially, e.g. тōлико = *so much*, just as кōлико (cf. p. 77) = *how much*.

## Vocabulary

понéдéлaк (or понéдéлbнйк or понéдeонйк) = <i>Monday</i>	зáбран = <i>corpse</i>
ýторак (or ýтóрнйк) = <i>Tuesday</i>	пòток = <i>stream, brook</i>
срéда = <i>Wednesday</i>	цвéтe = <i>flowers</i>
чeтвóртак = <i>Thursday</i>	гòлýб = <i>pigeon</i>
пéтак = <i>Friday</i>	зéц = <i>hare</i> (also <i>rabbit</i> )
сýбота = <i>Saturday</i>	рйба = <i>fish</i>
нéдeлa = <i>Sunday</i>	рáк = <i>crab</i>
я́нуáр = <i>January</i>	штáп = <i>stick</i>
фéбруáр = <i>February</i>	нòвац = <i>money</i>
мáрт = <i>March</i>	сáлòн = <i>drawing-room</i>
áпрйл = <i>April</i>	двóрац = <i>palace</i>
мáj = <i>May</i>	кафáна = <i>inn</i> (also <i>meхàна</i> )
jýни = <i>June</i>	пастрмкa = <i>trout</i>
jýли = <i>July</i>	дóстоjан = <i>worthy</i>
áвгуст = <i>August</i>	нéдостójан = <i>unworthy</i>
сeптéмбар = <i>September</i>	зáслужан = <i>who has deserved well of</i>
òктóбар = <i>October</i>	пòтребан = <i>necessary</i>
нòвéмбар = <i>November</i>	сирóмашан = <i>poor</i>
дeцéмбар = <i>December</i>	скупòцен = <i>precious</i>
Бóжйх = <i>Christmas</i>	рáскошан = <i>magnificent, luxurious</i> (also <i>spendthrift</i> )
Ýскрc = <i>Easter</i> (lit. <i>Uprising</i> )	слòбодан = <i>free</i> (also <i>permissible</i> )
пpиятéлство = <i>friendship</i>	дйвльй = <i>wild</i>
пòмòх = <i>help</i>	рђав = <i>bad</i>
близйна = <i>neighbourhood</i>	зéлен = <i>green</i>
чáс = (1) <i>hour</i> , (2) <i>moment</i> , (3) <i>lesson</i>	плáв, плáва = <i>blue</i> (also <i>fair-haired</i> )
пòсао = <i>business, job, work</i>	льýбичаст = <i>violet</i>
jéзик = <i>tongue, language</i>	
сýсед = <i>neighbour</i>	
дйвлáч = <i>game</i> (sc. <i>birds</i> )	

For numerals, adverbs, and prepositions, cf. pp. 92, 189, 151.

## Reading Exercise

1. Овáкáв чòвек jе дóстоjан вйсоког пòложájа.
2. Овáкò (adverbial use) рђав чòвек jе нéдостójан вáшeг

пријателства. 3. Оваквѣ слика је много скућпа него таквѣ. 4. Овако (adv.) добра жена заслужна је ваше пошћи. 5. И ја њмам таквѣ књигу. 6. Њмате ли и ви такав пешир?—Њмам. 7. Ко њма овакѣ књигу?—Моја сестра. 8. Зар ви њмате овакво одело?—Њмам. 9. Зар њмате онакав штѣп?—Њмам. 10. Њ мој сусед њма таког коња. 11. Њмамо ли толико новца колико нам је потребно?—Њмамо, ѡмамо, много мање. 12. У њшем врту ѡма толико цвећа колико у вашем. 13. Ја ѡмам толико пријатеља колико ѡн ѡма. 14. Овај човек је толико сиромашан да ѡма ни одела (ог одело, cf. note). 15. Њмате ли још вина у чаши?—Њмам. 16. Његова сестра ѡма плаву хаљину, ѡпа зелену а моја ѡубичасту. 17. Сѣба мога оца ѡма велике прозоре. 18. На зидовима ѡшега салона ѡма скупљених слика. 19. Њма ли ѡвде каква кафана у близини?—Њма, мамо даље напред. 20. Ви ѡмате оца?—Њмам. 21. Њма ли дивљачи у ѡшој шѣми?—Њма толико колико у ѡшој. 22. У ѡшем забрану ѡма доста зечѣва и дивљих голубѣва. 23. У ѡвѣмо потоку ѡма толико риба колико (ѡма) ракова. 24. Њма ли кога у тој сѣби?—Њма. 25. Зар твој отац ѡма више деце ѡсим тебе?—Њма. 26. Година ѡма дванаест месѣа: јѣнуар, фебруар, март, април, мај, јуни, јули, август, септембар, октобар, новембар, деѣмбар. 27. Мѣсѣц ѡма чѣтири недеље, недеља ѡма сѣдам дана: понедељак, уторак (ог уторник), среда, четвртак, петак, сѣбота и недеља. 28. Понедељником, средом и петком ѡмамо часѣве из ѣнглѣског јѣзика, уторником, четвртком и сѣботом из францѣског, а недељом смо слѣбодни. 29. Пред краљевим дворѣм ѡма велики и раскошан врт. 30. Њмате ли много посла?—Њмам.

## Notes

19. Имā ли = *is there any* . . .

28. понедѣльником, &c. : the days of the week used in the inst. sing. = '*on Mondays*', &c.

## Note

The object in a sentence after a *negative* transitive verb is frequently put in the genitive as well as in the accusative, though the accusative *can* be used in all cases, is the most frequent, and is generally preferred, e.g. нѣмāм тѣ кнѣге or нѣмāм тѣ кнѣгу = *I do not possess that book*, нѣ видѣм кѣѣ (or кѣѣ) = *I don't see the house* (also = *I don't see any house*), нѣ чуѣм глāса (or глāс) = *I don't hear the (or a) voice*; but occasionally there may be a slight difference in meaning between the two, e.g. зāшто нѣсте наѣчили лѣкциѣ (or лѣкциѣ)? = *why have you not learnt (your) lesson?* зāтō штō нѣмāм кнѣгу (acc. sing.) or кнѣге (acc. pl.) = *because I have not (got) the book or books* (sc. *the necessary ones*), but зāтō штō нѣмāм кнѣгā (gen. pl.) = *because I have no books*. But after the *impersonal* expressions нѣмā = *il n'y a pas*, нѣѣ имāло = *il n'y avait pas*; нѣѣ имати = *il n'y aura pas*, the genitive is *necessary*, e.g. нѣма (х)лѣба = *there is no bread*; нѣѣ имāло кнѣгā = *there were no books* (cf. p. 120).

## English Sentences

1. These flowers have a very nice smell; what are they called in Serbian?—Indeed, I do not know. 2. My room has four large windows. 3. In our drawing-room there are two tables, ten chairs, a piano, a Serbian carpet, and many other things. 4. Have you (got) flowers like this in your garden? 5. This poor man has no money, and his neighbour has much money. 6. I have never seen a crab so large, or such large, beautiful fishes; what kind are they?—They are called trout, and they are very tasty. 7. In our copse there are many hares, pigeons, and all sorts of game. 8. Please give me another tumbler like



this. 9. He has a Serbian lesson every day. 10. Are there any fish in that lake?—Yes, but in the neighbourhood there is a lake in which there are still bigger and better fishes. 11. My brother has fair hair and blue eyes, but my sister has dark hair and black eyes. 12. A picture of that sort is very precious. 13. A room of this size is very pleasant in summer, but very cold in winter. 14. Is there an inn (cf. p. 52) in this village? 15. He has so much work that he sleeps badly. 16. Easter next year will be on the 15th of April. 17. Christmas this year is on a Sunday. 18. The steamer goes on Mondays, Wednesdays, and Fridays, and returns on Tuesdays, Thursdays, and Saturdays. 19. This man is not worthy of your friendship, he has many debts. 20. This palace has many magnificent rooms, but has not enough windows, and its walls are not very strong.

## CHAPTER 23

### LIST OF USEFUL VERBS

THESE verbs are given in alphabetical order according to their *present* endings, cf. p. 103 f., together with their past participles active, from which the past tense, and their infinitives, from which the future tense, are formed.

I. Presents in -ем (-jem, -нем, -ujem), like трéсти, cf. p. 104:

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
бити ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to strike, to hit <sup>1</sup>	бѣжѣм	бѣо, -ла
бóсти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to butt, to toss	бóдѣм	бó, бóла
брáти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to pluck	бѣрѣм	брáо, -ла
брѣнути (се) ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to care (worry) about	брѣнѣм се	брѣнуо, -ла
брѣсати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to wipe <sup>2</sup>	брѣшѣм	брѣсао, -ла
вѣнути ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to wither	вѣнѣм	вѣнуо, -ла

<sup>1</sup> Cf. рáзбити (*pfv.*), рáзбѣжати (*ipfv.*) = to break in pieces, to smash; óдбити = to refuse (trans.).

<sup>2</sup> *Pfv.*, обрѣсати.

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
вѣкати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to shout <sup>1</sup>	вѣчѣм	вѣкао, -ла
војевати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to make war	вѡјујѣм	вѡјевао, -ла
вѣћи ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to pull <sup>2</sup>	вѣчѣм	вѣкао, -кла
гѣнути ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to perish <sup>3</sup>	гѣнѣм	гѣнуо, -ла
гладѡвати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to starve <sup>4</sup> (intrans.)	гладујѣм	гладѡвао, -ла
грѣјати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to warm <sup>5</sup> (trans. and intrans.)	грѣјѣм	грѣјао, -ла
грѣсти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to bite <sup>6</sup>	грѣзѣм	грѣзао, -зла
дарѣвати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to present <sup>7</sup>	дѣрујѣм	дарѣвао, -ла
дѡбити ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = to get <sup>8</sup>	дѡбијѣм	дѡбио, -ла
зѣбсти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to be cold <sup>9</sup>	зѣбѣм	зѣбао, -бла
зимѡвати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to winter	зимујѣм	зимѡвао, -ла
зрѣти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to ripen	зрѣм	зрѣо, <sup>10</sup> -ла
ѣменовати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to name	ѣменујѣм	ѣменовао, -ла
ѣскати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to require, to demand	ѣштѣм	ѣскао, -ла
кѡзати (cf. p. 134) = to say, to tell <sup>11</sup>	кѡжѣм	кѡзао, -ла
казѣвати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to tell (often) <sup>11</sup>	казујѣм	казѣвао, -ла
кѣснути ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to get wet <sup>12</sup>	кѣснѣм	кѣснуо, -ла

<sup>1</sup> *Pfv.* вѣкнути = to give a shout.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. обѣћи, обѣчем, обѣкао = to put on clothes, + се = to get dressed, свѣћи, &c., also скѣнути (Class II) = to take off clothes, свѣћи се = to get undressed; all these are *pfv.*

<sup>3</sup> *Pfv.* погинути.

<sup>4</sup> глад = hunger.

<sup>5</sup> + се = to warm oneself.

<sup>6</sup> Also ѣжсти (*pfv.*, cf. јѣсти, p. 112), ујѣдати (*ipfv.*, Class IV) = to bite.

<sup>7</sup> Also поклѡнити (*pfv.*, Class V, 1) = to give anything as a present, пѡклѡн = a present.

<sup>8</sup> *Ipfv.* дѡбѣјати, Class IV.

<sup>9</sup> A cold in the head is кѣјавица (кѣјати = to sneeze), a cold in the chest is кѡшаљ (*m.*, lit. cough, cf. p. 109), to catch cold is дѡбити кѣјавицу or прозѣбсти (*pfv.*).

<sup>10</sup> = ripe.

<sup>11</sup> Cf. показати and показѣвати = to show, p. 109.

<sup>12</sup> Cf. кѣсео = sour, кѣша = rain.

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
клѣкнути ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to kneel down</i>	клѣкнѣм	клѣкнуо, -ла
красти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to steal</i> <sup>1</sup>	крадѣм	краѡ, -ла
крѣнути <sup>2</sup> ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to turn</i> ( <i>trans.</i> ), + <i>ce</i> = <i>to start</i>	крѣнѣм	крѣнуо, -ла
купѡвати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to buy</i> (cf. p. 127)	кѹпујѣм	кѹповао, -ла
лѧјати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to bark</i>	лѧјѣм	лѧјао, -ла
лѣтовати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to spend the summer</i>	лѣтујѣм	лѣтовао, -ла
лйти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to pour</i> (cf. p. 107)	лйјѣм	лйо, -ла
мйловати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to caress</i>	мйлујѣм	мйловао, -ла
мйти <sup>3</sup> ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to wash</i> <sup>3</sup> ( <i>trans.</i> )	мйјѣм	мйо, -ла
мрѣнути ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to freeze, to be cold</i>	мрѣнѣм	мрѣнуо, -ла
мѹсти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to milk</i>	мѹзѣм	мѹзо, -зла
навикнути се ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to get used</i> <sup>4</sup>	навикнѣм се	навикнуо, -ла, or навикао
нагнути се ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to bend</i> ( <i>intrans.</i> )	нагнѣм се	нагнуо, -ла
ѡрати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to plough</i>	ѡрѣм	ѡрао, -ла
пѧсти ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to fall</i> <sup>5</sup>	пѧднѣм	пѧо, -ла
пѧсти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to pasture</i> ( <i>cattle</i> )	пѧсѣм	пѧсо, -сла
пѣћи ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to bake, also to roast</i> <sup>6</sup>	пѣчѣм	пѣкао, -кла
пѡбећи ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to run away</i>	пѡбегнѣм	пѡбегао, -гла
прѣсти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to spin</i>	прѣдѣм	прѣо, -ла

<sup>1</sup> *Pfv.* is *украсти*, &c.

<sup>2</sup> *покрѣнути* (*pfv.*), *покрѣтати* (*ipfv.*, Class III, 2 b) = *покрѣт* = *movement, to move* (*trans.*), *покрѣнути се* = *to move* (*trans.*).<sup>3</sup> Cf. note on p. 142.

<sup>4</sup> *Ipfv.* *навикавати се*, Class IV; a *habit* is *навика* (*f.*), a *custom*, *ѡбичѧј*, (*m.*).

<sup>5</sup> *Ipfv. freq.* *пѧдати*, Class IV.

<sup>6</sup> *пѣчено мѣсо*, *пѣцйво* or *печѣње* = *roast meat*; *to fry* is *пржйти*, Class V; *pastry* = *тѣсто*.

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
радовати се ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to rejoice</i>	радујем се	радовао, -ла
разликовати се ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to differ</i>	разликујем се	разликовао, -ла
расти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to grow</i> (in-trans.) <sup>1</sup>	растѐм	растао, расла
ратовати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to be at war</i>	ратујем	ратовао, -ла
рећи ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to say</i> (cf. pp. 102 178) <sup>2</sup>	рекнѐм	рекао, -кла
руковати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to handle, to direct</i> <sup>3</sup>	рукујем	руковао, -ла
срести <sup>4</sup> ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to meet</i> (trans., + се, intrans.)	срѐтнѐм	срѐо, -ла
стигнути <sup>5</sup> ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to reach, to arrive</i>	стигнѐм	стигао, -гла
тећи ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to flow</i>	течѐм	текао, -кла
тргнути ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to pull</i>	тргнѐм	тргнуо, -ла
тући се ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to fight</i>	тучѐм се	тукао, -кла
умрѐти ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to die</i> <sup>6</sup> (cf. p. 105)	умрѐм	умро, умрла
чѐзнути ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to long for</i> <sup>7</sup>	чѐзнѐм	чѐзнуо, -ла

## Note

The use of the verbs мѝти and прѝти is as follows: пѐрѐм рѝке, нѝге, тѝло, лѝце, тањѝр, &c. = *I wash* (or *I am washing*) *hands, feet, body, face, a plate, &c.*; рѝбље се пѐрѐ = *linen is washed* (or *is being washed*); жѝна мѝјѐ кѝсу = *a woman washes her hair*; ѝмѝвѝм се (cf. p. 114) = *I wash* (intrans.), or *I am washing* (intrans.), sc. *the face*, i.e. мѝти, and its compounds are never used of *things*.

<sup>1</sup> Literally; *pfv.* порѝсти; *to grow* = *to become*, cf. p. 107.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. одрѐћи = *to refuse* (intrans.).

<sup>3</sup> Used reflexively, + се = *to shake hands*.

<sup>4</sup> Root срѐ-, cf. срѐћа = *fortune*, sc. *good fortune*, срѐтан or срѐћан = *fortunate*, нѐсрећа = *misfortune*.

<sup>5</sup> Or стѝћи.

<sup>6</sup> Has *ipfv.* ѝмирати, Class IV.

<sup>7</sup> Cf. ишчѐзнути (*pfv.*), ишчѐзѝвати (*ipfv.*) = *to disappear*.

## II. Presents in -ам, like имати, cf. p. 104 :

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
бегати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to run (cf. also p. 148)	бегам	бегao, -ла
варати се ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to be mistaken <sup>1</sup>	варам се	варao, -ла
вечерати ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = to have supper once <sup>2</sup>	вечерам	вечераo, -ла
гледати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to look <sup>3</sup>	гледам	гледao, -ла
дувати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to blow	дувам	дуваo, -ла
знати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to know <sup>4</sup> (cf. p. 129)	знам	знаo, -ла
играти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to play, to dance <sup>5</sup>	играм	играo, -ла
јављати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to announce, to let know <sup>6</sup>	јављам	јављаo, -ла
корачати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to step <sup>7</sup>	корачам	кѡрачаo, -ла
кувати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to cook <sup>8</sup>	кувам	куваo, -ла
купати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to bathe (trans., + се, intrans.)	купам	купаo, -ла
морати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to be obliged (cf. p. 117)	морам	мораo, -ла
надати се ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to hope <sup>9</sup>	надам се	надаo, -ла
нападати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to attack	нападам	нападаo, -ла

<sup>1</sup> To make a mistake (*pfv.*) is преварити се or погрешити, Class V, 1; a mistake is погрешка. Cf. p. 203, 204.

<sup>2</sup> *Ipfv. freq.*, вечеравати, *pres.* вечеравам, Class IV.

<sup>3</sup> изгледати = to look like, + као, or simply impersonally изгледа = it seems (so), or + да = that; the *pfv.*, to catch sight of, is угледати, cf. p. 125.

<sup>4</sup> To get to know (a fact), *pfv.*, is дознати.

<sup>5</sup> игра = (1) a game, (2) a dance.

<sup>6</sup> For *pfv.*, cf. p. 146; + се = to appear (lit.).

<sup>7</sup> кѡрѡк = a step.

<sup>8</sup> Kitchen = кѡјна, cook = кѡвар (m.), кѡварица (f.).

<sup>9</sup> нада = hope (subst.).

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
оцећати се <sup>1</sup> ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to feel</i> (intrans.)	оцећам се	оцећао, -ла
пёвати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to sing</i>	пёвām	пёвао, -ла
плаћати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to pay</i> (cf. p. 146)	плаћām	плаћао, -ла
примати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to receive</i> (cf. p. 147)	примām	примао, -ла
пробати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to taste, to</i> <i>try</i> <sup>2</sup>	пробām	пробао, -ла
пуцати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to shoot</i>	пуцām	пуцао, -ла
пуштати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to let go</i> (cf. p. 147)	пуштām	пуштао, -ла
ручати ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to lunch, to</i> <i>dine</i> <sup>3</sup>	ручām	ручао, -ла
свирати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to play</i>	свирам	свирао, -ла
сећати се ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to remember</i>	сећām се	сећао, -ла
сијати се ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to shine</i>	сијам се	сијао, -ла
сликати ( <i>ipfv. and pfv.</i> ) = <i>to</i> <i>paint, to take a photo</i> <sup>4</sup>	сликām	сликао, -ла
слушати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to listen</i>	слушām	слушао, -ла
спавати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to sleep</i> (cf. p. 110)	спавām	спавао, -ла
страдати ( <i>ipfv. and pfv.</i> ) = <i>to</i> <i>suffer</i>	страдām	страдао, -ла
трёбати ( <i>ipfv. and pfv.</i> ) = <i>to</i> <i>be necessary</i>	трёба (cf. p. 117)	трёбало је
ужинати ( <i>ipfv. and pfv.</i> ) = <i>to</i> <i>take tea</i> <sup>5</sup>	ужинām	ужинао, -ла
умивати се ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to wash</i> (cf. p. 142)	умивām се	умивао, -ла

<sup>1</sup> оцећати is *trans.*, cf. сећати се; *to feel with one's hands* is пипати, Class IV.

<sup>2</sup> *To attempt*, cf. p. 129.

<sup>3</sup> Or *to dine in the middle of the day* (ручак); the *evening meal* is always вёчера, cf. p. 143; the *ipfv. freq.* is ручавати, *pres.* ручавам.

<sup>4</sup> сличан = *like*, овó је слично с тйм = *this is like that* (lit. *with that*).

<sup>5</sup> This meal is called ўжина.

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
употреблявати ( <i>ipfv.</i> <sup>1</sup> ) = <i>to use</i>	употреблявам	употребявао, -ла
хвата́ти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to seize</i> (cf. p. 148)	хва́там	хва́тао, -ла
че́кати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to wait</i> <sup>2</sup>	че́ка́м	че́као, -ла
чи́тати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to read</i> <sup>3</sup>	чи́та́м	чи́тао, -ла
штáмпати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to print</i>	штáмпáм	штáмпáо, -ла
ше́тати се ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to walk about</i> <sup>4</sup>	ше́та́м се	ше́тао, -ла

### III. Presents in -им like у́чити, cf. p. 104 :

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
ба́вити се ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to sojourn</i>	ба́вим се	ба́вио, -ла
ба́цити ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to throw</i> (cf. pp. 127, 128)	ба́цím	ба́цио, -ла
бо́лети ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to ache</i> (cf. p. 120)	(бо́лím)	бо́лео, -ла
во́дити ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to lead</i>	во́дím	во́дио, -ла
во́лети ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to like, to love</i>	во́лím	во́лео, -ла
вра́тити ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to give back</i> <sup>5</sup>	вра́тím	вра́тио, -ла
говóрити ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to speak</i>	говóрím	говóрио, -ла
го́рети ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to burn</i> (intrans. <sup>6</sup> )	го́рím	го́рео, -ла
гра́дити ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to build</i> <sup>7</sup>	гра́дím	гра́дио, -ла
гр́дити ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to scold</i>	гр́дím	гр́дио, -ла
др́жати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to hold</i>	др́жím	др́жао, -ла
же́лети ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to wish</i> <sup>8</sup>	же́лím	же́лео, -ла

<sup>1</sup> *Pfv.* is употребити, Class V, 1 ; + се = *to be used* ; use = употреба.

<sup>2</sup> *Pfvs.* are причекати, дочекати, and оцекати, all = *to wait a little* ; сачекати = *to wait for some one (till he comes)*.

<sup>3</sup> *Pfv.* прочитати, cf. p. 132 f.

<sup>4</sup> Also ходати and про́ћи се (*pres.* прођ́ем се).

<sup>5</sup> + се = *to return* (intrans.).

<sup>6</sup> *To burn* (trans.) is спа́лити (Class V, 1) or саж́ећи (Class III, 2 a ; *pres.* саж́еж́ем, *past* саж́егао, саж́егла), *pfvs.* of па́лити and же́ћи ; the *pfv.* of го́рети is изго́рети.

<sup>7</sup> *Pfv.* сагра́дити.

<sup>8</sup> e.g. же́лим вам сре́ћан пу́т = *I wish you a good journey*.

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
жівети ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to live</i> (cf. pp. 149, 208)	жівѣм	жівѣо, -ла
забрѣнити ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to forbid</i> <sup>1</sup>	забрѣнѣм	забрѣнио, -ла
јавити ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to let know</i> <sup>2</sup> (cf. p. 143)	јавѣм	јавѣо, -ла
кѹпити ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to buy</i> (cf. p. 141)	кѹпѣм	кѹпио, -ла
лѣжати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to lie, to be lying</i> (cf. p. 129)	лѣжѣм	лѣжао, -ла
лѣтѣти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to fly</i> (cf. p. 134 f.)	лѣтѣм	лѣтео, -ла
лѡжити <sup>3</sup> ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to lay a fire</i> (cf. p. 130)	лѡжѣм	лѡжио, -ла
лѹпити ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to knock, to bang</i>	лѹпѣм	лѹпио, -ла
мѣрити ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to weigh</i> (trans.), <i>to measure</i>	мѣрѣм	мѣрио, -ла
мрзѣти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to hate</i>	мрзѣм	мрзѣо, -ла
нѡсити ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to carry, to wear</i>	нѡсѣм	нѡсио, -ла
нѡћити ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to spend the night</i>	нѡћѣм	нѡћио, -ла
нѹдити <sup>4</sup> ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to offer</i>	нѹдѣм	нѹдио, -ла
ѡправити <sup>5</sup> ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to mend, to repair; to send some one</i>	ѡправѣм	ѡправио, -ла
ѡставити ( <i>ipfv.</i> and <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to leave</i>	ѡставѣм	ѡставио, -ла
пѣлити ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to light</i> <sup>6</sup>	пѣлѣм	пѣлио, -ла
пѣмтити ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to remember</i>	пѣмтѣм	пѣмтио, -ла
плѣтити ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to pay</i> (cf. p. 144)	плѣтѣм	плѣatio, -ла

<sup>1</sup> Past part. pass.: забрѣњено.

<sup>2</sup> + се = *to appear* (literally).

<sup>3</sup> предложити (*pfv.*), предлагати (*ipfv.*) = *to propose, to suggest*.

<sup>4</sup> *Pfv.* понудити.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. опѡравити се = *to recover from an illness*.

<sup>6</sup> *Pfv.* запѣлити.



<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
поздравити ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to greet</i> , <sup>1</sup> <i>to salute</i>	поздравѣм	поздравѣо, -ла
поправити ( <i>pfv.</i> ) <sup>2</sup> = <i>to correct</i> , <i>to improve</i>	поправѣм	поправѣо, -ла
праћити <sup>3</sup> ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to accom-</i> <i>pany, to escort</i>	праћѣм	праћѣо, -ла
правити ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to make</i>	правѣм	правѣо, -ла
превѣдити ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to trans-</i> <i>late</i> <sup>4</sup> (cf. p. 123)	превѣдѣм	превѣдѣо, -ла
прѣмити ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to receive, to</i> <i>get, to accept</i>	прѣмѣм	прѣмѣо, -ла
пружити ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to pass, to</i> <i>hand</i>	пружѣм	пружѣо, -ла
пустити ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to let go</i> (cf. p. 144)	пустѣм	пустѣо, -ла
пушити ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to smoke</i>	пушѣм	пушѣо, -ла
радити ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to do, to work</i> <sup>5</sup>	радѣм	радѣо, -ла
свршити ( <i>pfv.</i> ) <sup>6</sup> = <i>to finish</i> (trans.)	свршѣм	свршѣо, -ла
сѣдѣти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) <sup>7</sup> = <i>to sit</i> (cf. p. 130)	сѣдѣм	сѣдѣо, -ла
скѣчити ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to give a jump</i>	скѣчѣм	скѣчѣо, -ла
слѣмити ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to break (in</i> <i>two)</i>	слѣмѣм (от слѣмижѣм)	слѣмѣо, -ла
стѣдѣти се ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to be</i> <i>ashamed</i> <sup>8</sup>	стѣдѣм се	стѣдѣо, -ла
тѣжити ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to weigh (in-</i> <i>trans.)</i>	тѣжѣм	тѣжѣо, -ла
трѣпети ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to suffer</i> <sup>9</sup>	трѣпѣм	трѣпѣо, -ла

<sup>1</sup> A greeting is поздрав.

<sup>2</sup> *Ipfv.* поправѣати, Class IV. Cf. имати право = *to be right*,  
нѣмати право = *to be wrong*; correct (adj.) is тачно, cf. p. 183.

<sup>3</sup> праћѣлац (cf. p. 17) = *a guide*.

<sup>4</sup> *Pfv.* = превѣсти, превѣдѣм, прѣвео; a translation =  
превод.

<sup>5</sup> *Pfv.* урадити.

<sup>6</sup> *Ipfv.* свршѣвати, Class III, 3; + се : intrans.

<sup>7</sup> For *ipfv.* cf. p. 134.

<sup>8</sup> Cf. p. 41.

<sup>9</sup> Also паћити and страдати, cf. p. 144.

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
трѡшити ( <i>ipfv.</i> <sup>1</sup> ) = <i>to spend</i> ( <i>money</i> )	трѡшѣм	трѡшио, -ла
трѡчати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to run</i>	трѡчѣм	трѡчао, -ла
ћѹтати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to be silent</i>	ћѹтѣм	ћѹтао, -ла
ѹдарити ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to strike, to hit</i>	ѹдарѣм	ѹдарио, -ла
ѹхватити ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to seize, to</i> <i>catch</i> <sup>2</sup>	ѹхватѣм	ѹхватио, -ла
хвѡлити ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to praise</i>	хвѡлѣм	хвѡлио, -ла
чѣинити ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to do</i> <sup>3</sup>	чѣинѣм	чѣинио, -ла

## CHAPTER 24

## THE PAST TENSE (PERFECT OR COMPOUND PAST)

THIS tense is formed by means of the short present forms of бѣти = *to be*, and the past participle active of any verb. This participle is formed by cutting off the last two letters of the infinitive and substituting in the sing. -о for the *masc.*, -ла for the *fem.*, -лю for the *neut.*; in the pl. -ли for the *masc.*, -ле for the *fem.*, -ла for the *neut.*, e.g.

ѣмати : ѣмао (*m.*), ѣмала (*f.*), ѣмало (*n.*) } Sing.  
ѣмали (*m.*), ѣмале (*f.*), ѣмала (*n.*) } Pl.

If the stem ends in a consonant, a is put before o for the *masculine*, e.g.

мѡћи, stem мѡг- : мѡгао (*m.*), мѡгла (*f.*), мѡгло (*n.*).

мѡгли (*m.*), мѡгле (*f.*), мѡгла (*n.*).

If the stem ends in д or т, these drop before о (or л), e.g.

крѡсти, stem крѡд- : крѡо (*m.*), крѡла (*f.*), крѡло (*n.*).

крѡли (*m.*), крѡле (*f.*), крѡла (*n.*).

плѣсти, stem плет- : плѣо (*m.*), плѣла (*f.*), плѣло (*n.*).

плѣли (*m.*), плѣле (*f.*), плѣла (*n.*).

<sup>1</sup> *Pfv.* потрѡшити ; *expenses* = трѡшкови.

<sup>2</sup> *to catch a train* = у . . вѡз ; *to catch cold*, cf. p. 140.

<sup>3</sup> *Pfv.* учѣинити.

The past participle of *ѣти* = *to go* is *ѣшао, ѣшла, ѣшло* (derived from an old stem, *шед-*, prefixed with the *и-* of *ѣти*); the same with all its compounds, e.g. *дѣшао, дѣшла, дѣшло*, from *дѣти* (cf. p. 123); *расти* = *to grow* (cf. p. 102) has *растао, расла, расло* (orig. *раст+ти, рассти*); from verbs of Class V, 2, e.g. *жѣвети, вѣдети, вѣлети*, pasts are formed, and frequently used, from the present stem as well as from the inf. stem, viz. *жѣвио* or *жѣвео, вѣдио* or *вѣдео*, &c.

It has been already explained (p. 60) that this tense may correspond in meaning to the perfect, the pluperfect, the aorist, or the imperfect in English, regard of course being paid to the aspect of the verb.

Many verbs of Class II omit the syllable *-ну-* in all forms of the past except the masc. sing., cf. p. 107 and chap. 29.

In this tense, if the pronoun is retained, then the participle comes last; if it is omitted, it comes first.

The (perfect) past tense of all verbs is formed in this way.

### *Singular*

1. *ја сѣм ѣмао (ѣмала f.)*,  
or, more frequently, *ѣмао (ѣмала) сѣм = I have had*
2. *ти си ѣмао (ѣмала f.)* ,, *ѣмао (ѣмала) си = thou hast had*
3. *он је ѣмао* ,, *ѣмао је = he has had*  
*она је ѣмала* ,, *ѣмала је = she has had*  
*оно је ѣмало* ,, *ѣмало је = it has had*

### *Plural*

- ми смо ѣмали (ѣмале f.)*,  
or, more frequently, *ѣмали (ѣмале) смо = we have had*
- ви сте ѣмали (ѣмале f.)* ,, *ѣмали (ѣмале) сте = you have had*



## CHAPTER 25

## THE PREPOSITIONS

(AND THE USE OF THE VERBS ALREADY MENTIONED)

THE prepositions are both simple and compound ; the first govern one, two, or three cases, the second only the genitive.

I. The following are the simple prepositions which govern only one case, e.g.

## 1. The genitive :

бѣз = <i>without</i>	ѡд = ( <i>away</i> ) <i>from, since</i> (often merely = <i>of</i> )
близу <sup>1</sup> = <i>near</i>	ѡко = (1) <i>round</i> , <sup>4</sup> (2) <i>about</i> (= <i>approximately</i> )
вѡн = <i>outside</i>	ѡсим = <i>except, besides</i>
вѡше <sup>2</sup> = <i>above</i> (= <i>beyond</i> )	пѡред = <i>beside, alongside</i>
врѡх = <i>above</i> (= <i>over</i> )	пѡслѣ <sup>1</sup> = <i>after</i>
дѡ = (1) <i>as far as, until</i> , (2) <i>close to</i> , (3) <i>before</i>	прѣ <sup>1</sup> = <i>before</i>
дѡж = <i>alongside</i>	прѣко = <i>over, across</i>
збѡг = <i>on account of</i>	прѡтѣв = <i>against</i>
из = <i>out of, from</i>	рѡди = <i>for the sake of</i>
кѡд = <i>at (the house of), with,</i> <i>by (near)</i>	рѡзма = <i>besides, except</i>
крѡј <sup>3</sup> = <i>alongside</i>	сѣм = ѡсим
мѣсто = <i>instead of</i>	спрѡм = <i>in front of</i>
ниже <sup>2</sup> = <i>below</i>	срѣд = <i>in the middle of</i>
	сѡпрѡт = <i>opposite</i>

2. The dative : к (or ка) = *towards, to*.<sup>1</sup> Can also be used adverbially.<sup>2</sup> Are also comparative adjectives and adverbs.<sup>3</sup> As a *subst.* = (1) *the edge*, (2) *the end*.<sup>4</sup> *Round* (*adj.*) = *окръгао*.

## 3. The accusative :

чрòз = (1) *through*, (2) *in* (of нїз = *down*  
time)

мїмо = *past, in spite of*      ўз = *up (near, at)*

## 4. The locative :

прї = *by, near*.

прѐма = *towards, opposite, in contrast to*.

## II. The following prepositions govern two cases :

## 1. The gen. or inst. :

с or ca (+ gen.) = (1) *from off*, (2) *because of*, (+ inst.) = *with*.

## 2. The acc. or inst. :

мѣжy (+ acc.) = *between* (motion towards); (+ inst.) =  
*between* (rest at), *amongst*.

над (+ acc.) = *above or over* (motion towards); (+ inst.) =  
*above or over* (rest at).

пòд (+ acc.) = *under* (motion towards); (+ inst.) = *under*  
(rest at).

прѣд (+ acc.) = *in front of, before* (motion towards); (+ inst.) =  
*in front of* (rest at).

## 3. The acc. or loc. :

на (+ acc.) = (1) *on to*, (2) *for* (of time); (+ loc.) = *on*,  
also *at*.

ò (+ acc.) = *on, against*; (+ loc.) = *about, concerning*.

пò (+ acc.) = *for* (to fetch), *for* (of time), *at the rate of*;  
(+ loc.) = *about, over, after, according to*.

## III. The following prepositions govern three cases :

## 1. The gen., acc., or inst. :

за (+ gen.) = *in the time of*; (+ acc.) = *for* (also *in, at*,  
*behind, by*, cf. p. 160); (+ inst.) = *behind* (following  
after).

## 2. The gen., acc., or loc. :

ѣ (+ gen.) = *in the possession of* ; (+ acc.) = *into, at* (of time of day) ; (+ loc.) = *in*.

The following compound prepositions govern only the genitive :

ѣза = <i>behind, from behind</i>	насреѣд = <i>in the middle, into</i>
ѣзан <sup>1</sup> = <i>outside</i>	<i>the middle of</i>
ѣмеѣу = <i>between, amongst,</i>	поврѣх = <i>over</i>
<i>from amongst</i>	пѣкрај = <i>alongside</i>
ѣнад = <i>over, above</i>	пѣпѣт = <i>towards</i>
ѣспод = <i>under, from under</i>	посреѣд = <i>насреѣд</i>
ѣспреѣд = <i>from before</i>	снѣже <sup>2</sup> = <i>from below</i>
кросреѣд = <i>right through</i>	спѣреѣд = <i>beside</i>
наврѣх = <i>on the top of</i>	уврѣх = <i>on the top of</i>
накрај = <i>on or at or on to or</i>	ѣкрај = <i>пѣкрај</i>
<i>to the end</i>	умѣсто = <i>instead of</i>
наѣколо <sup>2</sup> = <i>all round</i>	ѣнаѣколо <sup>2</sup> = <i>наѣколо</i>
	усреѣд = <i>in the very middle of</i>

Examples (N.B. the prepositions often lose the accent when not emphasized, cf. also p. 22) :

## With the Genitive

I, 1. без нѣвца = *without money* ; без мѣне = (1) *without me*, (2) *in my absence* <sup>3</sup> ; без ѣчега = *without anything* ; бѣз обѣира на . . . = *without regard to . . .*

блѣзу вѣроши = *near the town* ; блѣзу мѣра = *near the sea* ; as comp. блѣже мѣне = *nearer (to) me* ; as superl., usually + dat. : наѣближе мѣни = *nearest (to) me*.

ван кѣѣе = *outside the house* ; ван сеѣе = *beside oneself* ;

<sup>1</sup> Cf. ѣванрѣдан = *extraordinary*.

<sup>2</sup> Can also be used adverbially.

<sup>3</sup> *Absence* = ѣсуство, на ѣсуству = *on leave, on holiday*.

стањујем ван вaроши = *I live out of town* ; (x)ајдемо ван вaроши = *let us go out of town*.

више : наша кућа је више ваше = *our house is above (behind) yours*.

врх : вода је врх мене = *the water is just over my head*.

до : (1) останите до краја овога месеца = *stay till the end of this month* ; идите до краја две улице = *go to the end of this street* ; (2) седите до мене = *sit close to me* ; он стањује до нас = *he lives next to us* ; (3) дођите до краја две недеље = *come before the end of this week*.

дуж реке = *along the river*.

због тога = *on account of that* ; због њега = (1) *because of him, on account of him*, (2) *for his sake* ; због посла = *on account of work*.

из : (x)ајдемо из куће = *let us go out of the house* ; добио сам писмо из Србије = *I have got a letter from Serbia* ; пореклом из Далмације = *(he is) by origin from Dalmatia* ; узели су се из љубави = *they married (lit. they took each other) from love*.

код нас = *'chez nous,' at our house, in our country* ; код куће = *at home*.

крај пута = *alongside the road*.

место мене = *instead of me*.

ниже : ваша кућа је ниже наше = *your house is below ours*.

од : добио сам писмо од њега = *I have got a letter from him* ; идите од мене = *go away from me* ; од прилике (or as one word, отприлике) = *approximately* ; умро је од ране = *he died from a wound* ; од радости = *from joy* ; од туге = *from sorrow* ; од Београда до Ниша = *from Belgrade to Nish* ; бвде сам од почетка две године = *I have been (lit. I am) here since the beginning of this year* ; девојка од осамнаест година = *a girl of 18* ; квака од врата = *the handle of the*



door ; ха̀лина од сви́ле = *a dress of silk* ; од че́га је дво̀ ? = *what is this made of ?* мѝрис од рѹжа = (1) *rose-scent*, (2) *the smell of roses* ; дво̀ј шешѝр је бо̀љи од то̀га = *this hat is better than that* (cf. p. 88) ; је́дан од ва̀с = *one of you* ; то̀ ни́је ле́по од ва̀с = *that is not nice of you* ; је́дан од дво̀их љу́ди = *one of these men*.

око̀ кѹ́ће је вѣ́рт = *round the house is a garden* ; око̀ рѹ́чка = *about lunch-time* ; око̀ тѣ́и<sup>1</sup> са́та = *about three o'clock* ; има̀ око̀ два́десет го́ди́на = *he (or she) is (lit. has) about 20 (years old)*.

осим̀ ме́не ни́кога̀ ни́је би́ло = *there was nobody (there) except me* ; осим̀ (or сем̀) то̀га = *besides that*.

поре́д шѹ́ме те́че ре́ка = *beside the forest flows a river* ; поре́д то̀га = осим̀ то̀га ; ста́ните поре́д ме́не = *stand next me*.

после́ ве́чера = *after supper* ; после́ две́<sup>1</sup> го́дине = *after two years* ; после́ не́колико да́на = *after several days* ; после́ све́га што́ је би́ло = *after all*<sup>2</sup> *that has happened*. (N.B. после́по́дне = *the afternoon* can also be used = 'in the afternoon' and as *this afternoon* : дво̀ после́по́дне.)

пре́<sup>1</sup> две́ го́дине (два́ да́на, не́колико не́деља́, месе́ци) = *two years (two days, several weeks, months) ago* (lit. *before . . .*) ; пре́ то̀га = *before that* ; до́шао је пре́ ње́ = *he came before her* (sc. *before she did*) ; пре́ све́га = *above all*. (N.B. пре́ подне́ = *the forenoon* can also be used = 'in the morning' and as *this morning* : дво̀ пре́по́дне.)

пре́ко по́ља = *through (across) the field* ; пре́ко бѣ́да (па́ни́не) = *over (across) the hill (mountain)*, sc. either *motion across* or *position beyond* ; пре́ђимо пре́ко ре́ке = *let us go across the river* (sc. either by boat or across a bridge) ;

<sup>1</sup> Cf. p. 93.

<sup>2</sup> 'After all' = *and yet* must be rendered by the conjunction *ипа́к*.

преко моста (or ћуприје) = *across the bridge*; преко пута, *across the road, over the way, opposite*; била сам у Србији преко (or више од) две године<sup>1</sup> (два месеца) = *I (fem.) was in Serbia more than two years (two months)*, N.B. *I have been in Serbia* would be ја сам у Србији већ (already) две године (годину дана = *one year*<sup>1</sup>), or има две године како сам у Србији; има две године како сам била (or нисам била) у Србији = *it is two years since I was in Serbia*.

против: он ради против мене = *he is working against me*; имате ли штѡ (or штѡгод) против тога = *have you anything against that (= any objection)*.

ради Бѡга = *for God's sake*; тога ради = *on account of that*.

разма = *ѡсим is seldom used*.

среѡ = *пѡсред*, cf. p. 153.

супрот наше куће = *opposite our house*.

### With the Dative

I, 2. к: дођите к мени = *come to me*; ѡтишао је ка реци = *he has gone towards the river*; ѡво је пут ка Скопљу = *this is the road to Skoplje*.

### With the Accusative

I, 3. кроз вáрош (село, шѡму, Србију) = *through the town (village, forest, Serbia)*; кроз месец дана<sup>1</sup> = *in a month's time*.

мимо куће = *past the house*; мимо вáше вѡље = *contrary to your wishes* (вѡља f., lit. = *will*); мимо нáшег очекивáња = *contrary to our expectation*.

низ реку (брдо) = *down stream (hill)*; сѡзе су јој текле

<sup>1</sup> But N.B. више од годину (acc.) дана (gen. pl.) = *more than a year (of days)*; this is a very common Serbian colloquialism); више од месец (or недељу) дана = *more than a month (or week)*.

низ лице = *tears were streaming down her face* ; низ длаку = *with the grain*, lit. and fig.

уз реку (брдо) = *up stream (hill)* ; уз длаку = *against the grain*, lit. and fig. ; ста̀ни уз мене (or ўзā ме) = *stand close to me* ; он то̀ ради мени уз пр̀ко̀с (or у пр̀ко̀с) = *he is doing that to spite me* ; шта̀ пи́јете уз је́ло ? = *what do you drink at meals ?* ра̀ме уз ра̀ме = *shoulder to shoulder* ; бо̀рити се уз не́кога = *to fight on behalf of (and with) anybody* ; ўз то̀ = *in addition to that*.

### With the Locative

I, 4. при бре́гу = *at the foot of the hill* ; при ве́чери (ру́чку, до́ручку) = *at supper (lunch, breakfast)* ; при сто́лу = *at table (eating)* ; не́мам но́вца при се́би = *I have no money on me* ; при свѐм(у) то̀м(е) = *in spite of all that*.

пре́ма : он се́ди пре́ма мени = *he is sitting opposite me* ; и́дите пра́во пре́ма онѡ́ј ку́ћи = *go straight towards that house* ; пре́ма то̀ме = *according to that or in contrast to that*.

### With the Genitive and Instrumental

II, 1. с or сѧ, (1) + gen. : до́шао је с пи́јаце (с ва́шара) = *he has come from the market (the fair)* ; си́шли су с бр̀да (пла́нине) = *they have come down from the hill (mountain)* ; с ђве (ђне) стра́не = *from this (that) side* ; с је́дне (дру́ге) стра́не = (1) *on one (the other) side*, (2) *on the one (the other) hand* ; с дра́ге во́ље = *with great pleasure* ; с де́сне (ле́ве) ру́ке = *on the right (left) hand* ; с то̀га = *from (= for) that*, sc. *reason*<sup>1</sup> ; —, (2) + inst. : сѧ мно́м = *with me* ; с ва́ма = *with you* ; са за́довољством = *with pleasure* ; с ту́гом = *with sorrow* ; с пра́вом = *with right* ; с ко́јом се оже́нио ? = *whom did he marry ?* с је́днѡм Е́нглѣскињѡм =

<sup>1</sup> A (or the) reason is разлог or ўзрок.

an *Englishwoman* ; шта ћете (sc. радити) стѣм ? = *what are you going to do with that* ? N.B. When the instrument is denoted instrumental case by itself is used, e.g. ја пишем пером а ви оловком = *I am writing with a pen and you with a pencil* ; с четири пријатеља = *with five friends* (N.B. numerals in such cases are not declined, cf. p. 93).

### With the Accusative and Instrumental

II, 2. међу, (1) + acc. : мајка оде међу децу = *the mother went amongst the children* ; мет(н)и ову књигу међу оне = *put this book amongst those* ; ———, (2) + inst. : он је најбољи међу вама = *he is the best amongst you (= of you)* ; живела сам годину и по (дана) међу Србима = *I (f.) lived a year and a half amongst the Serbs*.

над, (1) + acc. : наднесите се над умиваоџник = *bend over the basin* ; ———, (2) + inst. : над нама је (а)ероплан = *there is an aeroplane over us* ; над њим (ог од њега, cf. p. 89) нема бољег човека = *there is no man better than he* ; ко стањује над вама (ог више вас) ? = *who lives over you* ?

под, (1) + acc. : мет(н)ите ми јастук под главу = *put a pillow<sup>1</sup> under my head* ; узети кућу под кѣрију<sup>2</sup> = *to take a house on (lit. under) a lease* ; под старост = *in one's old age* ; ———, (2) + inst. : под њим је добар коњ = *there is a good horse under him* ; под владом овога краља = *under the rule of this king* ; под чијим именом = *under whose name* ; под заштитом, под влашћу + gen. = *under the protection, the power of . . .*

пред, (1) + acc. : спустите ципеле пред врата = *put the shoes in front of the door* ; он гледа пред се = *he is looking in front of himself* ; дођите пред вече = *come just before*

<sup>1</sup> Also = *cushion*.

<sup>2</sup> најмити (Class V, 1, *ipfv.*) = *to hire anything or any one* ; дати под кѣрију ог у најам = *to let (on hire)*.

evening (towards); пред рѹчак = *just before lunch*; мѣт(н)ите тѣ пред мѣне (or прѣдѣ ме) = *put it in front of me*; —, (2) + inst.: прѣда мною нѣма ништа = *there is nothing in front of me*; нѣко стоји прѣд кућом = *some one is standing in front of the house*.

### With the Accusative and Locative

II, 3. нѣ, (1) + acc.: мѣт(н)ите тѣ на стѣ = *put it on the table*; одговѣрићу на његово писмо = *I shall answer your letter*; нѣ здравље! = *to your health!* тѣ је на ващу штѣту (кѣрѣст) = *that is to your disadvantage (advantage)*; дајѣм вам ђво на поклѣн<sup>1</sup> = *I give you this as a present*; дѣћи ћу на нѣдељу данѣ = *I shall come for a week*; нѣ лето, нѣ зѣму = *for the coming summer, winter*; нѣ тѣј начин = (1) *in that manner*, (2) *in that event*; изѣћи нѣкоме на сѹсрет = (1) *to go to meet any one*; на брзу рѹку = *quickly*; пѹтујѣмо на Нѣш за Бѣоград = *we are travelling to Belgrade via Nish*; (2) *to help*; —, (2) + loc.: књѣге сѹ на стѣлу = *the books are on the table*; на кѣши = *in the rain*; хвѣла вам нѣ томе = *thank you for that*; на крају крајѣвѣ = *at long last* (lit. *at end of ends*); нѣхова кућа је на крају вѣроши = *their house is at the end of the town*; Бѣоград је на Дѹнаву и на Сѣви = *Belgrade is on the Danube and on the Save*; кѣко се кѣже на српскѣм, cf. p. 42.

ѡ, (1) + acc.: ѡбесите<sup>2</sup> кѣпѹт ѡ чивѣлук = *hang your coat on the peg (or hook)*; —, (2) + loc.: ѡ чѣмѹ гѣво-рѣте? = *what are you speaking about?* питаћу га ѡ томе = *I will ask him about that*.

пѡ, (1) + acc.: пѡштѣ сѹ јѣја? — по дѣсет пѣрѣ = *how much are the eggs?* — 10 *paras each*; дѣшао сам пѡ вѣс = *I have*

<sup>1</sup> поклѣнити (*pfv.*, Class V, 1) = *to present, to make a present of*.

<sup>2</sup> *Ipfv.* is вѣшати, Class IV; *to hang*, intrans., is вѣсити, Class V, 1.

*called for you* ; ѿмам по́сла по цѣо дѣн = *I have work for the whole day* ; —, (2) + loc. : разо́шли су се по ва́роши = *they dispersed all over the town* ; ви́ди се по њѣму да је бѣлестан = *one can see by his looks that he is ill* ; по за́кону = *according to the law* ; по мо́ме ми́шљењу = *in my opinion* ; по ре́ду = *one after the other, in turn* ; по пра́вилу = *by rule* ; по свѣ́ј прѣ́лици = *in all probability*.

### With the Genitive, Accusative, and Instrumental

III, 1. за, (1) + gen. : за вла́де ца́ра Ду́шана = *in the reign of tsar Dushan* ; —, (2) + acc. : се́д(н)ите за стѡ = *sit down to table* ; сѣ́нце је за́шло за́ брдо = *the sun has gone behind the hill* ; ѿма ли за ме́не пи́сѣма ? = *are there any letters for me* ? др́жите ме за́ ру́ку = *hold me by the hand* ; би́ћу го́тов за неде́љу да́на = *I shall be ready<sup>1</sup> in a week's time* ; за вре́ме дво́га ле́та = *in the course of or during this summer* (lit. *for the time of*) ; ја́ ћу пла́тити за́ вас = *I shall pay for you* ; зна́те ли ви́ за́ то ? = *do you know of that* ? чу́о сам за њѣ́га = *I have heard about (of) him* ; дво́у љу́зѣти (чу́вати) за се́бе = *I shall take (keep<sup>2</sup>) this for myself* ; ја́ вас смѣ́трам за при́јатеља = *I look on you as a friend* ; је́ ли дво́ пу́т за Бео́град ? = *is this the road to (for) Belgrade* ? (cf. p. 156) ; за ко́га ће се љу́дати ? = *whom is she going to marry* ? (cf. p. 157) ; за је́дног Ср́бина = *a Serbian* ; —, (3) + inst. : ѡни су ве́ћ за стѡ́лом = *they are already at table* ; не́ко ѿде за́ нама = *some one is following us* ; за́ кѣм је (sc. љу́дата ? = *to whom* (lit. *behind*) *is she* (sc. *married*) ? за је́дним ѿ́нгле́зом = *to an Englishman*.

III, 2. ѡ, (1) + gen. : у ко́га (more usually код ко́га)

<sup>1</sup> Another word for *ready* is *спрѣман*.

<sup>2</sup> *To keep doing anything, &c.*, must be rendered by the adverbs *непрѣстано* or *ста́лно* (= *ceaselessly*) and a verb ; *to keep* (*to hold, to maintain*) + др́жати (Class V, 2), cf. p. 145.

сте тражили по̀моћ ? = *from whom did you ask help?* (lit. *seek*) ; —, (2) + acc. : (х)ајдемо у ва̀рош = *let us go into the town* ; (х)ајдемо у мо̀ју со̀бу = *let us go into my room* ; у о̀но до̀ба<sup>1</sup> = *at that time* ; у̀ лето, у̀ зѣму, у̀ јесен, у̀ пролеће = *in the summer, winter, autumn, spring* ; у нѐдељу = *on Sunday* ; у по̀недеоник = *on Monday, &c., cf. p. 136* ; на̀ша дѐца и́ду у̀ шко̀лу = (1) *our children go to school*, (2) . . . *are on their way to school* ; у̀ ко̀рак = *at walking pace* ; ку̀да пу̀тујете ? — у (or за) Со̀лун, у (or за) Ср̀бију = *where are you travelling to?* — *To Salónica, to Serbia* ; —, (3) + loc. : где́ жи́вите ? — у Ду̀брѡвнику = *where do you live?* — *At Ragusa* ; у ко̀јој у̀лицѣ ста̀нујете ? — у Макѐдѡнској = *in which street do you live?* — *In Macedonia Street* ; има ли ку̀пати́ло у о̀во̀м хо̀телу ? = *is there a bathroom in this hotel?* у ко̀ме је ве́ку то́ би́ло ? = *in which century was that?* у о̀ста̀лом = *for the rest, for that matter* ; у мо̀м прѣсу̀ству (neut.) = *in my presence*.

Of the compound prepositions *иза*, *између*, and *испод* are especially common, e.g.

иза́ ку́ће је извор = *behind the house is a spring (of water)* ; на̀ше има́ње је иза́ се́ла = *our property is beyond (behind) the village*.

изме́ђу Бео̀града и Ни́ша има́ мно́го ста̀ни́ца = *there are many stations between Belgrade and Nish* ; изме́ђу на́с ни́је би́ло ни́чега = *there was nothing between us* ; се́дели смо изме́ђу про́зѡра и вра́та = *we were sitting between the window and the door*.

испод́ ру́ке = *under (one's) arm (also = privately)* ; испод́ сва́ке це́не = *below any price, sc. worthless*.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. p. 37.

## Vocabulary

универзитѣт = *university*  
 виногра́д = *vineyard*  
 шта́мпари́ја = *printing-press*  
 кла́вир = *piano*  
 ру́бље = *linen (= clothes)*.  
 пу́шка = *rifle*  
 те́нис = *tennis*  
 не́прија́тељ = *enemy*  
 нѣ́кат = *nail (of hand or foot),*  
     *claw*  
 ро́г = *horn*  
 ли́вада = *meadow*  
 ру́жа = *rose*  
 плу́г = *plough*  
 маши́на = (1) *machine*, (2)  
     *matches*  
 до́писница = *post-card*  
 ро́веда = *horned cattle*  
 о́вца = *sheep*  
 кро́ва = *cow*  
 ма́че = *kitten*  
 ле́птир = *butterfly*  
 ру́чак = *lunch*  
 ра́чу́н = *bill*  
 пре́дмет = *object, subject*<sup>1</sup>  
 ве́тар = *wind*

на́дзор = *supervision*  
 ўспомена = *souvenir, recollection*  
 преда́вање = *lecture*  
 књи́же́вност = *literature*  
 бро́ј = *number*  
 брѝ́га = *worry*  
 ора́ње = *ploughing*  
 гро́зница = *fever*  
 стра́на = *side*  
 теле́грам о́г де́пеша = *tele-*  
     *gram*  
 ўмо́ран = *tired*  
 ди́ван = *beautiful, lovely*  
 до́во́љан = *sufficient*  
 хла́дан = *cold*  
 ўжа́сан = *terrible, awful*  
 ўре́дан = *tidy*  
 држа́вни = *belonging to the state*  
 ре́дѡван = *regular*  
 це́о, це́ла = *whole*  
 стра́шан = *horrible*  
 мла́д, мла́да = *young*  
 тврѝ́д, тврѝ́да = *hard*  
 де́сны = *right-hand (adj.)*  
 ле́ви = *left-hand (adj.)*  
 по́ла, *num.* = *half*

## Reading Exercise

The verbs of the second group, cf. p. 143.

1. Вече́рас мо́рам да и́дем у Беѡгра́д. 2. Сви́рате ли на кла́вирѹ?—Сви́рам, а́ли не́ добро. 3. Ї́igrate ли те́нис?—Не́ (игра́м). 4. Поне́кад ў́вече чи́тамо до де́сет са́ти. 5. Шта́ то́ гле́дате́?—Гле́дам ѡно́ ку́че ка́ко се и́гра са ма́четѡм. 6. Мо́ј ѡта́ц спа́ва в́рло рѣ́аво. 7.

<sup>1</sup> The subject of a state is по́дани́к.



Зна́те ли гдѣ́ је хо́тел X?—У прво́ј у́лицы с де́сне стра́не.  
 8. Ми́ (се) шѣ́тамо́ ра́но ў́утру дў́ж пу́та по́ред на́шег  
 виногра́да. 9. Ми́ ни́када не ру́чавамо́ прѣ́ двана́ест  
 са́ти. 10. Ка́д ве́чѣра́вате?—Ў́ осам са́ти. 11. Ве́ћ  
 по́ла са́та ва́с че́кам шѣ́тају́ћи<sup>1</sup> го́ре до́ле. 12. Ка́ква  
 преда́вања́ слу́шате на уни́верзитѣ́ту?—Из а́нгле́ске  
 књи́же́вности. 13. Иза́ на́ше ку́ће је (ог и́ма) ве́лика  
 шу́ма у ко́јој ти́це пе́вају по цѣ́о да́н. 14. Насре́д по́ла  
 ду́ва стра́шан ве́тар. 15. Ка́д смо ў́пољу́ ми са́ми ку́вамо  
 ру́чак. 16. Слика́ ли ва́ша се́стра?—Она́ не́, а́ли мо́ј  
 мла́ђи бра́т сли́ка. 17. О́ву ру́жу не мо́гу ва́м да́ти (ог  
 . . . да́ вам да́м), о́во је ў́спомена од мо́га при́јате́ља. 18.  
 Ў́жинате́ ли ре́дѣ́вно?—Поне́кад не́. 19. Гдѣ́ се шу́та́мпа  
 ва́ша књи́га?—У др́жавно́ј шу́тапари́ји. 20. Ма́јке  
 но́ћу покрыва́ју сво́ју де́цу. 21. Гдѣ́ је ва́ша се́стра?—  
 Хва́та ле́пты́ре у в́рту. 22. Два́ чо́века ко́рачају́ та́мо-  
 а́мо испре́д на́ше ку́ће. 23. При́imate ли ка́кве но́вине?—  
 При́мамо трѣ́је (cf. pp. 30, 95) (ог трѣ́ брѣ́ја). 24. Мо́ј  
 бра́т ни́шта ми не ја́вља́ гдѣ́ је са́да. 25. Не́гов бра́т  
 не пла́ћа ў́редно сво́је рачу́не. 26. Не́ пушта́јте де́цу  
 ни́када без сво́га на́дзора. 27. Во́јници пу́цају из  
 пу́шакá. 28. Не́пријате́љ бе́га из се́ла и ва́роши. 29.  
 Стра́шно је уби́јати лу́де. 30. Не́ тре́ба бе́гати йспре́д  
 не́пријате́ља, не́го пу́цати на не́га и на́падати га. 31.  
 Дана́с не мо́гу ни ру́чати ни ве́черати, је́р се не о́сећа́м  
 до́бро.

The verbs of the first group, cf. p. 139.

32. Во́лови бо́дү́ ро́говима. 33. Ма́чка грѣ́бе но́кtima. 34. Са́мо рѣ́ави лу́ди кра́ду. 35. Хо́дете ли да и́де́мо  
 ве́чѣра́с на брѣ́г (ог брѣ́до)?—Не мо́гу, й́ма́м мно́го по́сла. 36. На о́номе брѣ́гу ра́сте ди́вно цве́ће. 37. Ка́д ў́мре́мо

<sup>1</sup> Present indeclinable participle, 'walking,' cf. p. 194.

брига немамо. 38. Ћмете ли да плетете чарапе?—Не ѱмѣм, али моје сѣстре ѱмеју. 39. Да ли ваши ѱченици довољно разѱмеју енглѣски?—Прилично. 40. Смѣте ли да пуцаѣте из пушке?—Смѣм, зашто не ! 41. Наши сељаѣи не ору више плуѓом и воловима, него машинѣм за орање. 42. Прѣду ли ваше сељанке?—Не. Код нас, у Србији, прѣду и сељанке и маѣке. 43. Зашто зебеш напољу, зар ти није хладно?—Није. 44. Хѣћу да сѣднем, ѱжасно сам ѱморан. 45. Чѣсто пуѣта војници сами пѣру своје рѣбље. 46. Не треба гриѣсти зубима тврде предмете. 47. Не ѱмѣм да музем краве, али ѱмѣм помало овце. 48. Тресѣ се као да је у грѣзници. 49. Говѣда и овце пасу по зелѣној ливади.

#### Notes

15. ми сами=here *we ourselves*, but can also=*we alone*.  
 17. даѣти, cf. p. 111.  
 42. прѣсти, stem пред-, Class I, 1.  
     жѣна прѣде вѣну=*a woman is spinning the wool*.  
     маѣка прѣде=*the cat purrs*.  
 44. сѣсти, stem сѣд-, the present tense сѣднем, cf. p. 106.

#### English Sentences

1. We receive every day an English newspaper and a Serbian newspaper. 2. Do you read much?—I read two hours every evening. 3. Oxen and cows butt with their horns. 4. Why are you beating this unfortunate horse? 5. Some one is shouting for help. 6. Flowers wither very quickly when they have no water. 7. These poor children are very tired and are starving; their parents have no money. 8. Do you wash with hot or cold water? 9. What do you drink at meals? 10. Do you understand what I say? 11. Do you know how to milk cows? 12. I am cold. 13. This river flows very rapidly. 14. When you speak slowly I understand everything. 15. Whither does this road lead? 16. We lunch at 1 o'clock, have tea at half-past 4, and sup at 8. 17. You are mistaken,

this is not the road for Salonika. 18. What are these men building?—They are building a new railway. 19. I smoke twenty cigarettes every day. 20. Are you staying here long?—No, only four days. 21. These trees grow very quickly. 22. This man does not use enough soap. 23. We walk for an hour every evening. 24. This is the printing-press of our university; many books are printed here. 25. What are you doing? Are you not ashamed? 26. I do not remember what is the number of my room. 27. I do not sleep well in this hotel; people sing and talk and play on the piano the whole night. 28. He has fever and is lying in bed; the doctor says he is very ill. 29. Do you know whose cows and sheep these are which are grazing on this meadow? 30. We spend the summer in the village (=in the country) and the winter in the town.

## CHAPTER 26

## DEFINITIVE PRONOUNS

(AND THE USE OF THE VERBS ALREADY MENTIONED)

Sing. *сѣв* (*m.*), *свѣ* (*f.*), *свѣ* (*n.*) } = *all, the whole*.

Pl. *свѣ* (*m.*), *свѣ* (*f.*), *свѣ* (*n.*) }

*сѣм, сѣма, сѣмо* } = (1) *(one)self*, (2) *alone*.

*сѣми, сѣме, сѣма* }

*ѣсти, ѣста, ѣсто* } = *the same*.

*мнѣги, мнѣга, мнѣго* } = *many a, many*.

*мнѣги, мнѣге, мнѣга* }

*дрѣги, дрѣга, дрѣго* } = *(an)other* (also = *second*).

*дрѣги, дрѣге, дрѣга* }

*сѣв* (another form of which is *вѣс*) is declined like *нѣм*, cf. pp. 66 ff., gen. sing. *свѣга*, &c.; irr. gen. pl. *свѣју*.

*сѣм* is declined like *мѣж*, cf. p. 67, gen. sing. *сѣмог(а)*. In the same way are declined *ѣсти*, gen. *ѣстѣг(а)*, *мнѣги*, gen. *мнѣгѣг(а)*, and *дрѣги*, gen. *дрѣгѣг(а)*. *ѣсти* is always

preceded by a demonstrative pronoun, usually *tâj*, when it means *the same*; when it means *the same sort of* it is followed by *tâkav*, cf. p. 135. *One another* is rendered by *један друкѡра*, but occasionally this meaning is covered by the reflexive verbs, cf. pp. 114 ff.

### Vocabulary

лѡрма = *noise*  
 рѡжањ = *spit* (for roasting)  
 дрѡво = *tree*  
 прѡлеће = *spring* (of the year)  
 јесѡн = *autumn*  
 сѡнак = *small street*  
 злѡто = *gold*  
 рѡкија = *brandy*  
 сѡвет = (1) *council*, (2) *advice*<sup>1</sup>

спѡћа = *luck, happiness*  
 лѡто = *summer*  
 зѡма = *winter*  
 нѡвин = *innocent*  
 неверѡѡтан = *improbable*  
 прѡљав = *dirty*  
 прѡшли = *former, previous*  
 тѡжак, тѡшка = *heavy, difficult*

истѡћи (*pfv.*, Class I, 1) = *to flow out*

избрисати (*pfv.*, Class III, 3)  
 = *to wipe or brush*

покрѡрити (*pfv.*, Class V, 1) = *to spoil*

ѡгрѡјати се (*pfv.*, Class III, 2)  
 = *to warm oneself*

ѡмити се (*pfv.*, Class III, 1)  
 = *to wash (one's face)*

### Reading Exercise

The verbs of the first group, cf. p. 139.

1. Каѡд сте лѡгли сѡнѡћ?—У јѡдѡнаест сѡти. 2. Сѡѡ вѡно је истѡкло из бѡрета. 3. Истѡга дѡна каѡа је ѡн дѡшаѡ мѡ смо бѡили ѡ шуми и сѡкли дрѡва. 4. Јѡсте ли му кѡзали да дѡђе сѡтра у пѡдне?—Јѡсам. 5. Дѡѡа су се тѡкла на сѡкаку ѡжѡсно вѡчуѡи. 6. Сѡѡ су ми кѡзали да ѡн није ѡредан чѡвек. 7. Нѡ мѡраге свѡма кѡзати сѡѡ што сте чуѡи. 8. Дѡѡ вѡлика кѡња вѡкла су тѡшка кѡла. 9. Јѡ јѡј нисам рѡкао дѡ сам вам дѡѡ нѡну

<sup>1</sup> *To advise* is сѡветѡвати (*pfv.*, Class III, 3).

књигу. 10. Ви сами сте ми рекли да им то не кажем. 11. Мoja сестра је добила исту такву хаљину. 12. Пси су синћи много лајали. 13. Јесте ли се довољно огрејали?—Јесмо. 14. Ми смо му давали добре савете неколико пута. 15. Јуче смо јахали три сага. 16. Јесте ли избрисали лице и руке?—Нисам, немам убрус (огнешир). 17. Знате ли ко је убио овога човека?—Не знам. 18. Прешлога лета кад смо били у селу умивали смо се увек на реци. 19. Умивате ли се врућом или (х)ладном водом?—(Х)ладном. 20. Јесте ли се умиили?—Јесмо. 21. Јесте ли икад пили ракију?—Нисам никад. 22. Синћи је крша страшно лаја. 23. Шта си оно крио малочас када сам ушао у твоју собу?—Вашу књигу. 24. Чоо сам да су га везали па онда били; то је невероватно! 25. Прекјуче смо пекли јагње на ражњу. 26. Све што (се) сија није злато. 27. Многи (људи) су невино страдали. 28. С тим новцем други (човек) би био задовољан. 29. Много пута сам ти рекао да не слушаи рђаве савете. 30. Нису сви (људи) исте срђе. 31. Он је сам певао свирајући на клавиру. 32. Он сам рекао ми је да не уме да свира. 33. Ви сами сте чули да она пева врло рђаво. 34. Јесте ли сами били у позоришту?—Не, био сам са својом сестром. 35. То исту гдпожу видео сам саму синћи у деам часова да шета поред реке. 36. Мој сат је подварен (past participle passive).

## Notes

1. пећи=*to go to bed, pfv.* 2. истекло, from истѣти, stem тек-. 3. сѣкли, from сѣти, stem сек-. 5. Present, indeclinable participle from вѣкати, cf. p. 140, 194. 13. *Pfv.*, cf. грѣјати, *trans.*, or грѣјати се, *reflex.*, *ipfv.* 16. Cf. брѣсати, *ipfv.* 18. прешлога, cf. p. 40. 20. Cf. p. 142. 23. оно=*that* is often inserted redundantly in such sentences, lit. 'what that thou wast hiding'='what was that which thou wast'.

24. *nă*=*and*. 31. Present indeclinable participle from *снѣ-пати*, cf. pp. 144, 194. 35. *чѣс*, a synonym of *cât*, may also mean a (*short*) *while*, *cámy*: lit. *I saw her that she walks*.

### English Sentences

1. Who is making that awful noise? Do they not know that we are tired and wish to sleep? 2. This summer has been very hot, but last summer was cold. 3. I have never drunk brandy; is it nice? 4. What is this small street called? 5. Why have you brought me a dirty towel? 6. Why did you not wipe your feet (*hõre*) when you came into the house?—We forgot. 7. Did you hear that noise?—No, I did not. 8. When did you arrive?—At 12 o'clock. 9. Why are these people fighting?—Because they do not like one another. 10. From what did he die?—From a wound. 11. I hope that you feel better now? 12. We bathed this morning in the lake; the water was quite warm. 13. How much must I give this porter? 14. Did you receive my letter? 15. How much did you pay for this suit of clothes? 16. We saw you in the town, but you did not see us. 17. We waited three hours. 18. Where did you buy this book?—I buy all my books in the same shop. 19. Have you tried this dish? It is very tasty.—No, I am a little afraid; I don't know of what it is. 20. They have forbidden us to walk in their garden. 21. We returned home the day before yesterday. 22. Have you finished your work? 23. We lived five years in Serbia. 24. How long did you stay in London? 25. All the newspapers say the same thing, but not one of them speaks the truth. 26. Give me another towel and another piece of soap. 27. Many people say that they cook well in that hotel. 28. Were you alone in the theatre last night? 29. That is the same man whom we saw yesterday. 30. She said this herself, but probably she was wrong.

## CHAPTER 27

THE FUTURE TENSE OF *TO HAVE*, AND OF  
OTHER VERBS

THIS tense is formed from all verbs in the same way as the future of *бѣти*, as mentioned on p. 73; the future of *ѣмати*=*to have* is :

Sing.	1. <i>ја ѣу ѣмати</i>	or	<i>ѣаѣу.</i>
	2. <i>тѣ ѣеш ѣмати</i>	„	<i>ѣаѣеш.</i>
	3. <i>ѡн ѣе ѣмати</i>	„	<i>ѣаѣе.</i>
	<i>ѡна ѣе ѣмати</i>	„	<i>ѣаѣе.</i>
	<i>ѡно ѣе ѣмати</i>	„	<i>ѣаѣе.</i>
Pl.	1. <i>ми ѣемо ѣмати</i>	„	<i>ѣаѣемо.</i>
	2. <i>ви ѣете ѣмати</i>	„	<i>ѣаѣете</i>
	3. <i>ѡни ѣе ѣмати</i>	„	<i>ѣаѣе.</i>
	<i>ѡне ѣе ѣмати</i>	„	<i>ѣаѣе.</i>
	<i>ѡна ѣе ѣмати</i>	„	<i>ѣаѣе.</i>

When the verb is reflexive the pronoun *се* is placed as follows : *ја ѣу се вратѣти* or *вратѣѣу се*=*I shall return*.

If the stem ends in *з* or *с*, these become *ш* before *ѣ* in the shortened forms of the future.

*грѣсти* (cf. p. 140)=*to bite*, future : *грѣшѣу*, e.g. from *грѣз*+*ѣу*, *грѣс*+*ѣу*; *пѣсти* (cf. p. 141)=*to fall*, future : *пѣшѣу*, from *пѣс*+*ѣу*.

If the infinitive ends in *-ѣи*, the enclitic present forms of *хрѣти* (*ѣу*, *ѣеш*, *ѣе*, &c.) are not suffixed to the stem, but put after the infinitive as a separate word, e.g.

*рѣѣи* (cf. p. 142)=*to say*, shortened future :

<i>рѣѣи ѣу</i>	<i>рѣѣи ѣемо</i>
<i>рѣѣи ѣеш</i>	<i>рѣѣи ѣете</i>
<i>рѣѣи ѣе</i>	<i>рѣѣи ѣе</i>

The *exact future* of *имати* and of all other verbs is formed by means of the perfective present of *бѣти* (cf. p. 34) and the past participle of any verb, e.g.

- |                                    |                                  |
|------------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| 1. бѹдѣмъ имаю ( <i>f. имала</i> ) | бѹдѣмо имали ( <i>f. имале</i> ) |
| 2. бѹдѣшъ имаю ( <i>f. имала</i> ) | бѹдѣте имали ( <i>f. имале</i> ) |
| 3. бѹдѣ имаю                       | бѹдѹ имали                       |
| бѹдѣ имала                         | бѹдѹ имале                       |
| бѹдѣ имало                         | бѹдѹ имала                       |

This tense is mostly used after *кад* = *when*, *if*, or *ако* = *if*, in temporal or conditional subordinate clauses, e.g.

1. Вѣдеху вас кад бѹдемъ имаю времена = *I shall see you when I (shall) have time.*

2. Ако бѹдемъ имаю времена доѣху ху да вас вѣдим = *If I (shall) have time I shall come to see you.*

## CHAPTER 28

### INDEFINITE PRONOUNS AND ADVERBS

I, 1. By prefixing with the particle *не* such interrogative pronouns as *кѹ* = *who*? and *штѹ* (or *штѹ*) = *what*? these pronouns acquire an indefinite meaning, e.g. *нѣко* = *some one, any one*; *нѣшто* = *something, anything*.

2. *кѹји*, *кѹја*, *кѹје* are usually contracted with *нѣ* into :

Masc. Sing. нѣкѹи, Pl. нѣкѹи	} = <i>certain, some.</i>
Fem. Sing. нѣкѹа, Pl. нѣкѹе	
Neut. Sing. нѣкѹѹ, Pl. нѣкѹѹ	

3. *какаѹ*, *каква*, *какѹ* prefixed with *не* has the following meaning :

нѣкакаѹ ( <i>m.</i> )	} = <i>of a certain sort, a certain (= нѣки).</i>
нѣкаква ( <i>f.</i> )	
нѣкакѹ ( <i>n.</i> )	



4. From *коликѣ* the most usual form is the neuter :

*нѣколико* = *several* (requires the gen. pl.).

5. From *чѣји* = *whose* are formed

*нѣчији*, *нѣчија*, *нѣчије* = *some one's*.

II. Prefixed with *ни* these pronouns acquire negative meaning, e.g.

1. *нико* = *no one*, *ништа* = *nothing* ; when these pronouns are governed by a preposition, the latter separates their two halves, e.g. *ни од кога* = *not from any one* ; *нипошто* = *not for anything (in the world)*.

2. *никакав*, *никаква*, *-во* = *not of any kind, none*, e.g. *нѣ видѣм никакав пѣт* = *I see no road at all*.

3. *ничији*, *-ја*, *-је* = *no one's*.

4. *ниједан*, *ниједна*, &c., are also used instead of *никоји*, &c.

III. The prefix *које-* makes these pronouns still more indefinite, e.g.

*којекѣ* = *any one whatever, just any one* ; *којешта* = *just anything* ; these have derogatory meaning. Similarly *којекакав*, *којечји*.

IV. *гдѣ-* has distributive force, e.g.

*гдѣко* = *some one at times*, also *гдѣкоји*, *гдѣ где* = *here and there*.

V. *штѣ-* :

*штѣко* = *this one and then that*, also *штѣшта*, *штѣкоји* (these are rarely used).

VI. The words *му драго* (lit. *to him dear*) are often added to all interrogative pronouns, e.g.

*кѣ му драго* = *any one you like* (*му* is impersonal) ; *штѣ му драго* = *anything you like* ; *који му драго* = *кѣ му драго*, &c.

## 172 INDEFINITE PRONOUNS AND ADVERBS

VII. By suffixing them with -год they acquire two different meanings, according to whether one word is formed or two :

ко̀дгод = *some one*, but ко г̀д = *whoever, any one whoever, any one you like* ; шт̀дгод = *something, што г̀д = whatever, anything whatever, anything you like*. Similarly који г̀д, &c., какав г̀д, &c., колико г̀д, чији г̀д, &c., but these only separately.

VIII. Prefixed with и they acquire the meaning 'ever', 'at all', e.g.

йко = *any one at all* ; йшта = *anything at all* ; йкоји, -а, -е, = *any at all* ; йчији = *any one's at all* ; йкакав = *any at all, of any kind whatever* ; йка̀ко = *by any means at all* ; йкада = *ever (at all)*.

IX. The prefix ма gives them the meaning of '-ever', and is written separately, e.g.

ма ко̀ = *whoever* ; ма шт̀а = *whatever, &c.*

X. By prefixing them with св̀а, св̀е (cf. p. 165) they acquire a general meaning, e.g.

св̀аки, св̀ака, св̀ако = *every, each* ; св̀ашта, св̀ашто = *everything* ; св̀ачијѝ—св̀ачиј̀а—св̀ачиј̀е = *every one's* ; св̀е-колики, -а, -о, = *of every kind*<sup>1</sup> ; св̀ака̀ко means *in any case*.

## CHAPTER 29

### PRACTICE IN THE USE OF THE VERBS ALREADY MENTIONED

#### Vocabulary

тр̀говац = *merchant*  
ра̀дник = *labourer*  
ста̀до = *flock*  
вра̀бац = *sparrow*

про̀лаз = *passage*  
у̀вреда = *offence*  
пра̀во = *right*  
ду̀г = *debt*

<sup>1</sup> Also св̀аковрстан, св̀аковрсна, from вр̀ста = *a sort, a kind*.

рукав = *sleeve*  
 клад = *shadow, shade*  
 храст = *oak* (also дуб)  
 сак = *sack*  
 икона = *icon (holy image)*  
 стотина = *hundred*  
 низбрдица = *slope*  
 долина = *valley*  
 (х)рана = *food*  
 ватра = *fire*  
 обала = *bank (of river, &c.)*  
 впр = *pool*

улетети (*pfv.*, Class V, 2) = *to fly into*  
 правити се (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to pretend (to be)*  
 радо = *gladly*

граница = *frontier*  
 истина = *truth*  
 неправда = *injustice*  
 поmrчина = *darkness*  
 плата = *salary*  
 гвозден, гвоздена = *iron*  
 енглески = *English*  
 српски = *Serbian*  
 заузет = *occupied*  
 студен, студена = *cold*  
 вероватан = *probable*  
 сличан = *like (+c+inst.)*

купати се (*ipfv.*, IV) = *to bathe (intrans.)*  
 скакати (*ipfv.*, III, 2 b) = *to jump*  
 погинути (*pfv.*, II) = *to be killed*

### Reading Exercise

The verbs of the first group, cf. p. 139.

1. Хоћете ли се мнѣго брѣнути ако ваља деца оду<sup>1</sup> на реку?—Дабоме да хођу! 2. Његова браћа погинула су у овоме рату. 3. Деца често чезну за својом кућом. 4. Кйснули смо цео дан идѣћи<sup>2</sup> из вароши у село. 5. Зашто нисте ушли у кућу него сте се мрзнули на студенѣм ветру! 6. Ове руже ће брзо увенути. 7. Хоћете ли да дигнете то перо са пода?—Врло радо. 8. Нека стара госпођа клекнула је пред икону на сред цркве. 9. Нисам могао да га викинем јер је био сувише далеко од мене. 10. Некакав човек са дугом брадом тргнуо ме је за рукав када сам се нагнуо кроз прозор. 11. Кад сте се кренули од куће те сте стигли тако рано?—Кренуо сам се у пола четири. 12. Нико

<sup>1</sup> Like њи. <sup>2</sup> Present indecl. participle from њи, cf. p. 194.

ми није хтео помоћи да дигнем овај цак на кљупу. 13. Она је неколико пута пала на овој низбрдици. 14. Ко год је хтео могао је сести у први ред. 15. Куповали су што год су хтели и сад се брину шта ће (се. радити) без новца. 16. Јесте ли срели малочас једног високог господина са шеширом у руци?—Нисам. 17. Срели смо децу која су побегла овим путем у ону долину. 18. Идуће године леговаћемо у селу. 19. Где сте зимовали прошле године?—У Италији. 20. Никада нећу моћи разликовати ваше синове, толико су слични. 21. Срби су војевали са Турцима неколико стотина година. 22. Радоваћемо се много ако будете дошли летос да будемо заједно у селу. 23. Енглези и Срби сигурно никада неће међу собом ратовати. 24. Зар ћемо се руковати колико год се пута данас будемо срели! 25. Кад мој пријатељ буде добио сина богато ћу га даривати. 26. Мајка ће миловати своје дете (па) ма какво оно било. 27. Нећу им сто пута казивати исту ствар. 28. Име-  
нујте ми најбоље ствари из српске књижевности.

The verbs of the third group, cf. pp. 145 ff.

29. Ми нећемо хвалити кога му драго него само заслужне људе. 30. Живећемо како му драго. 31. Нећемо примати свачије савете. 32. Овога лета преводићете Шекспира. 33. Надао сам се да ћете увек говорити истину. 34. Желео сам да их видим синоћ, али нису дошли. 35. Увек ћемо мрзети неправду. 36. Јуче ме је много болела глава. 37. Он је толико грдио некога радника да сам га се сам ја стидео. 38. Бојим се да нећете моћи преносити у овоме хотелу; све је заузето. 39. Колико сте књига данас купили?—Ниједну. 40. Само мала деца бодје се помрчине. 41. Пожите ли ватру у соби где спавате?—Никад. 42. Говорите ли енглески?

—Врло ма́ло. 43. Она́ је жи́вела у Србији го́дину да́на. 44. Јесте ли преводили штѣгод са српскѣг на енглѣскѣ ?—Нисам ништа. 45. Јесте ли мно́го ра́дили до́к сте би́ли на универзитѣту ?—При́лично. 46. Зар ви́ше не́ може (e.g. он, она) да трѣчи ?—Не́ може. 47. Ју́трѣс је у́жасно грмело. 48. Ка́д ћете ми врати́ти књѣге ко́је (ог штѣ) сте у́зели прѣ не́ки да́н ?—Сју́тра. 49. Ми́ ћемо вам ја́вити а́ко га бу́демо ви́дели. 50. Гдѣ си у́хватио то́га вра́нца ?—У́ соби, улѣтео је кроз про́зор. 51. Ста́до ова́ца ле́жало је у хла́ду ши́роко́га хра́ста. 52. Пра́ви се да не́ чу́је. 53. Ку́пају́ћи се ска́кали су са висо́ке ђбале у дубо́ки ви́р. 54. Сва́како, ви́ ћете до́ћи ?—Да́, до́ћи ћу чи́м при́мим пла́ту. 55. Забра́нићемо вам про́лаз ђвуда а́ко ђпет бу́дете до́шли с(а) ку́четом. 56. Јесте ли пу́шили ка́дгод ?—Јѣсам, кад сам би́о сту́дент. 57. У́дарио га је по но́зи не́каквим гво́зденим шта́пом. 58. Не́чија ко́ла би́ла су си́ноћ пред не́говом ку́ћом. 59. Хо́ћете ли да трѣ́чимо ?—Не мо́гу, мр́зи ме. 60. Же́лите ли да му ка́жѣм да сам је ви́део ?—Не́. 61. Ка́д го́д сам је ви́део ја́ сам је по́здравио лу́базно коли́ко го́д сам у́мео. 62. Ни́су ми пла́тили сав ду́г. 63. Ни́су га пу́стили пре́ко гра́нице. 64. За́што трѣ́пите та́кве у́вреде ! 65. Дрѣ́жим да сам у пра́ву. 66. Јѣ ли го́рела ва́тра си́ноћ у ђво́ј сѣби ?—Ни́је.

## Notes

4. Many verbs whose infinitive ends in -нути lose the syllable -ну- in the past part. active, e.g. кѣснули смо ог кѣсли смо ; 5. мрзнули ог мрзли ; 8. клѣкнула ог клѣкла ; 10. тргнуо ог тргао (ог тргѣ in conversation) ; нагнуо ог нагао (=нагѣ), &c. 11. Also крѣнути, *transitive pfv.* = *to move some one or something*. 13. па́ла, from па́сти, stem пад-. 18. ђду́ћи, -а, -е, present part. act. from ђћи, used here as an adjective=

## 176 USE OF VERBS ALREADY MENTIONED

*following.* 20. різни́ковати, used transitively = to tell the difference between. 24. спі́сти се (stem спет-), refl., to meet (one another).

### English Sentences

1. This merchant pays very little to his workmen and workwomen. 2. They were lunching in the shade of this large oak. 3. The puppy bit the sleeve of his coat. 4. We are warming ourselves by the fire. 5. This workman gets very good pay, but he spends it all in the inn. 6. We were sitting on the bank of the pool. 7. At what o'clock shall you start tomorrow? 8. We met them at the end of the valley. 9. We cannot light the fire, we have no matches. 10. You are right and he is wrong. 11. This slope is so steep that we cannot ride up it. 12. Where did you buy your house? It looks a very good one. 13. This professor gets 25,000 *dinars* of salary, but nevertheless he has many debts. 14. These children are pasturing their flocks on our meadows; I told them that they may. 15. As soon as we returned we undressed and went to bed. 16. We shall stay here several weeks; we like this place very much. 17. If you give me some money I will go to buy some tobacco, some cigarettes, and some matches. 18. My foot hurts; I fancy my boot is too tight. 19. I must go and get a shave and get my hair cut. Where is the barber's?—At the end of this street. 20. He has broken his mirror; they say that is very unlucky, but I don't believe this. 21. Does this dog bite?—Yes, and this cat scratches. 22. When shall we arrive at Salonika?—In two hours. 23. How far is the frontier from here?—I don't know. 24. Why are you silent and do not answer me? 25. It is time that we get up and wash and shave and get dressed. Breakfast is already waiting. 26. At what time did you start? 27. Who gave you that book? 28. How much money have you spent? 29. Do you prefer wine or beer? 30. You are laughing at me.

## CHAPTER 30

THE IMPERATIVE AND THE CONDITIONAL OF  
ALL VERBS

## I. Imperative

As indicated on p. 81, special forms exist for the 2nd pers. sing. and the 1st and 2nd pers. pl.

These exist in two forms, viz. -й, -ймо, -йте, and -j, -jмо, -jте; the first are taken by all the verbs of Classes I and II and by all those of Classes III and V whose presents are not formed with -jem, -jim; the second are taken by such verbs of Classes III and V as form their present with -jem, -jim, and by all the verbs of Class IV.

The 3rd pers. sing. and pl. is paraphrased, as in English, the forms of the present being used preceded by нѣка = *let*.

These endings, -й, -ймо, and -йте, are added to the present stem after cutting off the -ем or -им of the present, e.g.

трѣси = *shake*; нѣка трѣсе, трѣсимо, трѣсите, нѣка трѣсу; similarly ўзми(те) = *take*; пѡчни(те) = *begin*; зѡви(те) = *call*; дѣйни(те) = *lift*; мѣгни(те) = *put*; лѣгни(те) = *lie down*; сѣдни(те) = *sit down*; помѡгни(те) = *help*; ѡстани(те) = *stay*; пиши(те) = *write*; покажи(те) = *show*; пѡшли(те) = *send*; ўчи(те) = *learn*; вѣди(те) = *see*; дрѣжи(те) = *hold*; трѣчи(те) = *run*.

The endings -j, -jмо, -jте are added to the present stem of the other verbs as follows:

чѣй = *listen, hear*; нѣка чѣје, чѣјмо, чѣјте, нѣка чѣју; similarly пѣй(те) = *drink*; брѣй(те) = *shave*; вѣрѣй(те) = *believe*; причай(те) = *tell, relate*; нѣ бѡй(те) се = *do not fear*; стѡй(те) = *stand*.

In *emphatic prohibitions* the imperative is preceded by не, e.g. не показѣй(те) = *do not show* (for the aspects

cf. pp. 121 ff.), otherwise very frequent use is made of the word нѐмѡј(те)=*don't*, which is really a contraction of the imper. of не мѡѣи=*not to be able*; this is followed by the infinitive, e.g. нѐмѡј(те) кáзати (показѣвати)=*don't tell (show)*; нѐмѡјмо=*do not let us*.

The 3rd pers. sing. and pl. negated is expressed thus : нѣка не дѡлази=*let him not come*.

Verbs of Class I whose roots end in г, к, х, change these letters into з, ц, с, e.g. рѣѣи=*to tell*; рѣци(те)=*tell*; рѣцимо=*let us say (let us suppose)*.

The imperative of разѹмети is разѹми(те)=*understand*; that of both дáвати and дѣти is дѣј(те)=*give*.

In verbs of Class II the н is frequently omitted in rapid speech, e.g. мѣтите, сѣдите.

## II. Conditional

This is formed, as mentioned on p. 81, by means of the aorist of the verb бѣти, and the past part. active of any verb, e.g. from ѣмати :

- |                           |    |                      |
|---------------------------|----|----------------------|
| 1. јѣ бих ѣмао (f. ѣмала) | or | ѣмао (f. ѣмала) бих. |
| 2. тѣ би ѣмао (f. ѣмала)  | „  | ѣмао (f. ѣмала) би.  |
| 3. ѡн би ѣмао             | „  | ѣмао би.             |
| ѡна би ѣмала              | „  | ѣмала би.            |
| ѡно би ѣмало              | „  | ѣмало би             |
| 1. мѣ би ѣмали (f. ѣмале) | or | ѣмали (f. ѣмале) би. |
| 2. вѣ би ѣмали (f. ѣмале) | „  | ѣмали (f. ѣмале) би. |
| 3. ѡни би ѣмали           | „  | ѣмали би.            |
| ѡне би ѣмале              | „  | ѣмале би.            |
| ѡна би ѣмала              | „  | ѣмала би.            |

The form би through the whole plural is more usual than the forms бѣємо, бѣете (cf. p. 82).



## CHAPTER 31

## ADVERBS

(AND THE USE OF THE IMPERATIVE AND THE  
CONDITIONAL)

THE adverbs may be of the following kinds :

## 1. Temporal

баш = <i>just, exactly</i>	јуче = <i>yesterday</i>
вѣзда = <i>always</i>	кад от када = <i>when</i>
вѣћ = <i>already, (but)</i>	кадгод = <i>sometime or other</i>
вечѣрас = <i>this evening</i>	кад год = <i>whenever</i>
вѣчито = <i>eternally</i>	касно = <i>late</i>
више не . . . = <i>no longer (cf.</i>	касније = <i>later (on)</i>
p. 186)	каткад = <i>at times</i>
давно = <i>long since</i>	лане от лани = <i>last year</i>
данас = <i>to-day</i>	лѣти = <i>in the summer</i>
дању = <i>by day</i>	лѣто = <i>this summer</i>
до сад = <i>till now</i>	малочас = <i>just recently</i>
доцкан = <i>late</i>	мало после = <i>a little later,</i>
доцније = <i>later (on).</i>	<i>presently</i>
зачас = <i>in a minute</i>	мало прѣ = <i>a few minutes ago</i>
затим = <i>after that</i>	махом = <i>most of the time</i>
зимѣ = <i>in the winter</i>	међутим = <i>meanwhile</i>
зимѣс = <i>this winter</i>	најзад = <i>at last, last of all</i>
йгда <sup>1</sup> = <i>ever</i>	најпре = <i>first of all</i>
йкад = <i>ever (at all)</i>	напокон = <i>at the end of (of</i>
йстом = <i>at the same moment</i>	<i>time)</i>
једном = <i>once, one day</i>	напослетку = <i>at last</i>
јесенас = <i>this autumn</i>	најпосле = <i>finally</i>
јутро = <i>this morning</i>	недавно = <i>lately</i>

<sup>1</sup> In the phrase што йгда можете = *as much as ever you can.*

нѣкад(а) = <i>formerly</i>	прòлетòс = <i>this spring</i>
нѣкад(а) = <i>never</i>	р̀аниje = <i>earlier, previously</i>
нòħас = <i>to-night</i>	р̀ано = <i>early</i>
нòħу = <i>by night</i>	р̀ѣтко = <i>seldom, rarely</i>
òд̀авно = <i>давно</i>	с̀ад or с̀ада = <i>now</i>
òд̀м̀ах = <i>at once, immediately</i>	с̀в̀акад } = <i>always</i>
òд̀сад = <i>henceforward</i>	с̀в̀агда }
òнда = <i>then</i>	с̀йнòħ = <i>last night</i>
онòм̀ад or онòм̀адне = <i>the other day</i>	скòро = <i>soon</i>
òном̀л̀ани = <i>the other year</i>	с̀ўтра = <i>to-morrow</i>
òпет = <i>again</i>	т̀ад(̀а) = <i>then</i>
òтад(а) = <i>since then</i>	т̀ам̀ан <sup>1</sup> = <i>only just</i>
òткад(а) = <i>since when</i>	т̀ек <sup>1</sup> = <i>only (German erst), also = nevertheless, at any rate (cf. p. 193)</i>
з̀òнекад = <i>at times</i>	ў̀бр̀зо = <i>soon</i>
п̀д̀сле = <i>afterwards</i>	ў̀в̀ек = <i>always</i>
п̀д̀слеп̀òдне = <i>in the afternoon</i>	ў̀вече = <i>in the evening</i>
п̀òт̀ом(е) = <i>after that</i>	ў̀јутру = <i>in the morning</i>
пр̀ѣ = <i>formerly (also = ago)</i>	ў̀очи = <i>on the eve</i>
пр̀ѣп̀òдне = <i>in the morning</i>	ў̀скоро = <i>soon</i>
пр̀ѣк̀јуче = <i>the day before yesterday</i>	штò пр̀ѣ = <i>as soon as possible</i>
пр̀ѣк̀(о)с̀утра = <i>the day after to-morrow</i>	ч̀а̀к = <i>even</i>
пр̀ѣксинòħ = <i>the night before last</i>	ч̀а̀сом or ч̀а̀ском = (1) <i>for a minute, (2) in a minute</i>
	ч̀ѣсто or ч̀ѣсто п̀ўта = <i>often</i>

## 2. Local

б̀л̀ізу = <i>near by</i>	г̀д̀ѣг̀де = <i>in places</i>
б̀л̀іже = <i>nearer</i>	г̀д̀ѣгòд = <i>somewhere or other</i>
г̀д̀ѣ = <i>where</i>	г̀д̀ѣг̀д̀д = <i>wherever</i>

<sup>1</sup> + што = *barely*, cf. p. 213.

гѡре = <i>up above, (to) above</i>	ѡдѧвдѣ = <i>from here, hence</i>
далѣко = <i>far</i>	ѡдаклѣ = <i>from where, whence</i>
дѧље = <i>further</i>	ѡдѧндѣ = <i>from yonder</i>
дѣсно = <i>to the right, on the right</i> <sup>1</sup>	ѡдатлѣ = <i>from there, thence</i>
дѡвдѣ = <i>as far as here</i>	ѡдовуд = <i>from this direction</i>
дѡкле = <i>how far (=to what distance</i> <sup>2</sup> )	ѡдонуд = <i>from that direction</i>
дѡле = <i>down below, (to) below</i>	ѡзгѡ or ѡдѡзгѡ = <i>from above</i>
дѡндѣ = <i>to that place (yonder)</i>	ѡздо or ѡдѡздѡ = <i>from below</i>
дѡглѣ = <i>to that place</i>	ѡнамо = <i>thither</i>
ѡзблѡза = <i>from close to</i>	ѡнде = <i>yonder</i>
издалѣка = <i>from afar</i>	ѡнудѧ = <i>that way</i>
изнѡтра = <i>(from) inside</i>	ѡстрѧг = <i>from behind</i>
кѧмо = <i>whither</i>	ѡткуд(а) = <i>whence</i>
кѡд or кѡдѧ = <i>whither</i>	ѡтуд = <i>thence</i>
куд гѡд = <i>whithersoever</i>	пѡзѧди = <i>behind</i>
лѣво = <i>to the left, on the left</i> <sup>3</sup>	пѡпрѣко = <i>across</i>
мѣстимице = <i>in places</i>	свѡдѧ = <i>everywhere</i>
нѧдѣсно = <i>дѣсно</i>	спѡдѧ = <i>(from) outside</i>
нѧзѧд = <i>backwards</i>	спрѣда = <i>(from) in front</i>
нѧлѣво = <i>лѣво</i>	тѧмо = <i>there, thither</i>
нѧпоље = <i>(to) out of doors</i>	тѧмо—ѧмо = <i>hither and thither</i>
нѧпо ѡу = <i>out of doors</i>	тѡ = <i>(1) here, (2) there</i>
нѧпрѣд = <i>forwards</i>	тѡдѧ = <i>that way</i>
нѧтрѧг = <i>backwards</i>	ѡздѡж = <i>along, lengthwise</i>
нѣгде = <i>somewhere</i>	унѧзѧд = <i>назад</i>
нѡгде = <i>nowhere</i>	унѧкрст = <i>across, crosswise</i>
ѡвамо = <i>hither</i>	унѧпрѣд = <i>напред</i>
ѡвде = <i>here</i>	унѡтра = <i>inside</i>
ѡвудѧ = <i>this way</i>	чѧк = <i>even, right up to</i>

<sup>1</sup> Ор с дѣснѣ странѣ.<sup>3</sup> Ор с лѣве странѣ.<sup>2</sup> *How far is it to . . . ?* = кѡлико је далѣко до . . . ?

## 3. Modal

бада̀ва = <i>in vain, gratis</i>	и́пак = <i>however, nevertheless</i>
ба̀р = <i>at least</i>	ја̀мачно = <i>surely, I expect</i>
бѐсплатно = <i>gratis, without paying</i>	је́дино = <i>solely</i>
бр̀зо = <i>quickly, fast</i>	је́два = <i>barely, hardly, scarcely</i>
ве́дма = <i>very</i>	је́ш = <i>still, yet, more (some more)</i>
ве́ћинџм = <i>for the most part</i>	ка̀о = <i>as (like), cf. p. 210</i>
ви́ше = <i>no more, no longer</i>	ка̀ко = <i>how</i>
вр̀ло = <i>very</i>	како гџд = <i>in whatever way</i>
гџто̀во = <i>almost</i>	к(а)оба́јаги = <i>making out that (colloquial)</i>
до̀иста = <i>truly, really</i>	кра̀дом = <i>stealthily</i>
до̀некле = <i>to a certain extent (also lit. of place)</i>	кри́шом = <i>secretly</i>
дру̀кчије = <i>differently</i>	леже́ћкџ = <i>lying down</i>
жму̀рећкџ = <i>closing the eyes</i>	ма̀кар = <i>at least</i>
за̀иста = <i>до̀иста</i>	ма̀ло по̀ ма̀ло = <i>little by little, by degrees</i>
за̀једно = <i>together</i>	ма̀лчице = <i>a little bit</i>
за̀луд = <i>in vain</i>	мо̀жда = <i>perhaps</i>
за̀мало = <i>у̀мало</i>	му̀ком = <i>silently</i>
за̀р = <i>really? (cf. p. 33)</i>	му́чкџ = <i>in a cowardly way</i>
за̀то = <i>for that reason</i>	на̀валице } = <i>purposely</i>
за̀це́ло = <i>for sure</i>	на̀влаш }
за̀што = <i>why</i>	на̀име = <i>namely</i>
зби́ља <sup>1</sup> = <i>in very fact, really</i>	наопа́чке = <i>wrong way round</i>
зби́љскџ <sup>1</sup> = <i>seriously</i>	на̀равно = <i>naturally</i>
изне́нада = <i>suddenly</i>	на̀рочито = <i>especially</i>
и́наче = (1) <i>otherwise, else ;</i> (2) <i>in any case ;</i> (3) <i>as a rule</i>	на̀трашкџ = <i>backwards</i>

<sup>1</sup> Cf. џзби́љан = *serious, grave, earnest.*

наўзнāко = *on one's back*  
 на́шински ог на́шки = *in our*  
*fashion*

не́кāко = *in a certain way*

недбично = *unusually*

немилице = *mercilessly*

не́приметно = *imperceptibly*

не́хотицē = *unwillingly*

ни́кāко = *in no way, not at all*

ни́пошто = *not for anything*

ни́чицē = *prone*

о́бично = *usually*

ова́кō = *in this way*

о́двек } = *too much*  
 о́двие } = *too much*

одједанпѣт } = *all at once*  
 одједнōм } = *(suddenly)*

она́кō = *in that way*

о́собито = *especially*

пѣшке ог пѣшице = *on foot*

поимѣнце = *by one's<sup>1</sup> name*

појединцē = *singly*

пола́гāно = (1) *slowly*; (2)  
*gradually*

пōмало = *slightly*

пōлако = *slowly*

пōсепце = *one at a time*

пōстепено } = *gradually*  
 пōступно } = *gradually*

пōтпуно = *completely*

потрбу́шкē = *on one's stomach*

пра́во = *right (just, straight,*  
*lit. and fig.)*

при́лично = *fairly*

ра́вно = *all the same (+ ми*  
*је)*

са́мо = *only*

свејѣдно = *all the same, it*  
*doesn't matter*

са́свѣм = *quite*

сва́кāко = *certainly, by all*  
*means, surely*

својски = *in a kindred spirit*

си́гурно = *without fail, for*  
*certain*

скѹпа = *together*

сто́га = *for that reason*

стојѣ́кē = *standing up*

сѹвише = (1) *too much*; (2)  
*too (e.g. tired)*

та́јом = *secretly*

та́кō = *so, thus, in that way,*  
*to such an extent*

тако́ђе(р) = *also, likewise*

та́ко њстō = *in just the same*  
*way*

та́чно = (1) *exactly*; (2)  
*punctually*

то́бож = *as it were, making*  
*out that*

ѹзалу́д = *залу́д*

ѹмало = *almost*

<sup>1</sup> *by name, namely = на́име.*

уопште = *in general*хѣтимицѣ = *willingly*ѹпрѣво = *just so*ширѣм = *wide open*

тѣм (inst. of тѣ) followed by бѣле, гѣре, вѣше, мѣше = *by so much the better, all the better, worse, more, less*; this may be preceded by у кѣлико (cf. p. 135).

#### 4. Quantitative

(Cf. also modal adverbs)

вѣше = *more*нѣјвише = *most, at most*вѣше не = *no more* (нѣманѣјмаше = *least, at least*вѣше . . . = *there is no more + gen. . . .*)нѣколико = *several, a few*дѣвѣлно } = *enough, sufficiently, fairly*нѣ у колико } = *not in the least*дѣста }  
кѣлико = *how much, how many*прѣлично = *fairly, rather*прѣсечно = *on an average*сѣвише = *too much*мѣло = *little, a few*сѣвише мѣло = *too little*мѣше = *less*толикѣ = *so much, so many*мнѣго } = *much, many, a great deal, a lot*ѹмало = *nearly*

#### 5. Adjectival Adverbs

These are formed from adjectives as follows :

гѣсподеки = *in a gentlemanly way*пријатѣљски = *in a friendly way*дѣбро = *well, all right*рѣаво = *very bad(ly)*јѹнѣчки = *heroically*рѹжно = *bad, badly*кѹкавички = *in a cowardly way*српскѣй = *in Serbian (fashion or language)*

#### Vocabulary

нѣва = *field*жѣга = *great heat*рѣзвалине = *ruins*ѣмрѣл, кѣшобрѣн = *umbrella*тѣјна = *secret*мрѣз = *frost*

време = *time, weather*кйша = *rain*гађање = *shooting*нѡв = *new*јѡк (*nom. pl. masc., јѡки*),јѡка = *strong*напасти (*pfv., I, 1, and II*) =  
*to attack*тражити (*ipfv., V, 1*) = *to seek*увести (*pfv., I, 1*) = *to lead*  
*into*забѡравити (*pfv., V, 1*) = *to*  
*forget*пѡверити (*pfv., V, 1*) = *to con-*  
*fide*грѹб, грѹба = *rude, rough*рѹжан = *ugly*сйгѹран = *sure*интересѡнтѡн = *interesting*лѡнскй = *of last year*ѡдати (*pfv., IV*) = *to betray*развадити (*pfv., V, 1*) = *to*  
*separate*зѡтѡрити (*pfv., V, 1*) = *to shut*<sup>1</sup>ѡтѡрити (*pfv., V, 1*) = *to open*<sup>2</sup>вѣжбѡти се (*ipfv., IV*) = *to prac-*  
*tise*јѡвити се (*pfv., V, 1*) = *to let*  
*know about oneself*

## Reading Exercise

1. Мѡлим вас, свйрајте штѡгод. 2. Рѡдите што гѡд хѡћете, мѡни је прѡво. 3. Кѡжите му, мѡлим вас, нека спѡва. 4. Нѡмѡјте га тѹћи, тѡ је дѡистѡ грѹбо ѡд вас. 5. За њѡга би бйло мнѡго бѡље да йде ѡдмах ѡдѡвдѡ. 6. Рѡдије бих ѹмро нѡго да ѡдѡм тѡјну кѡју ми је пѡверѡ мѡј пријѡтељ. 7. Нѡ би трѡбѡло купѡвати му нѡво ѡдѡло, ѡво је сѡсвйм дѡбро. 8. Зѡвите га да се врѡти, забѡравѡ сам дѡ му кѡжем јѡш нѡшто. 9. Уведѡите је унутѡра. 10. Изѡђите нѡпоље, мнѡго је пријѡтније у ѡвѡме хлѡду. 11. Нѡка йду лѡтѡс у ѡно сѡло у кѡме смо мй бйли лѡни. 12. Зймѹс ћѡмо ймати јѡке мрѡзеве. 13. Лѡтѡс ће бйти вѡка жѡга нѡго лѡнске гѡдине. 14. Дйвно би бйло ѡко би вѡчѡрас ѡтишли на кѡнцер(ѡ)т. 15. Дѡшаѡ бих прѡлетѡс дѡ вас мѡкар (ѡг бѡр) на јѡдан дѡн ѡко бѹдем ймѡ вѡременѡ. 16. Куд гѡд се крѡнете њѡга ћете срѡсти. 17. Нѡмѡјте тѡлико вйкѡти; ћѹтите мѡло ѡко мѡжете. 18. Ѳвѡј кѡњ

<sup>1</sup> *Shut* (adj.) is зѡтворѡн.<sup>2</sup> *Open* (adj.) is ѡтворѡн.

је веома миран, можете му прићи сасвим близу. 19. Онѐ развалине су врло интересантне, само сподља не можете ништа видети, морате ўћи унутра. 20. Свакако (да) би било сигурније лично с њим да говорите о томе. 21. Неможте нипошто говорити о мени, иначе ће се све свршити наопачке. 22. Лежећке се не може свршити никакав посао. 23. Ружно би било ако то ўзме (т.ј.<sup>1</sup> он) кришом. 24. Неможте крадом изаћи него се јавите. 25. Отворите широм врата и прозоре. 26. Тукли би се немилице да их нису развадили. 27. Зовите свакога поименце. 28. Војници су лежали потрбушке вежбајући се у гађању. 29. Оно што тражите не можете наћи жмурџке. 30. Не би требало обратити (њиву) пре него што киша падне. 31. Свршите часком тај посао па онда идите куд год хоћете. 32. Дајте му само малчице (ог малло) да пробва. 33. Кукавички је мучки напасти. 34. Нема више хлѐба. 35. Није више бвде.

### English Sentences

1. We should have come yesterday if we had been able.
2. If I had known that it will rain I should have brought an umbrella.
3. It would be better to start at once, for it is already very late.
4. If you had listened you would have understood.
5. Those are the ruins of an old monastery.
6. What are you looking for?
7. If you have no objection I shall open the window.
8. If I had had more money I should have given him more.
9. Let me know as soon as you arrive.
10. Shut the door, there is a terrible draught; we shall all catch cold.
11. If you practised more, you would play better.
12. If I had the money I should go to the theatre this evening.
13. The soldiers are very hungry and very thirsty.
14. As soon as I finish this job I shall go away.
15. I have found an interesting book.
16. If you had been more amiable she would have confided to you her secret.
17. These are last

<sup>1</sup> то јѐст = i.e.



year's apples, but they are still quite good. 18. I am sure that this would be best. 19. The wind is so strong that I cannot open the window. 20. I have forgotten what I was going to say. 21. If you had done this, they would have killed you. 22. The banks of this river are very steep, and the river itself is very deep and swift. 23. If you had asked him he would have told you. 24. When we came out of the house it was already late and we did not see any one anywhere. 25. In the morning it rained hard, but in the afternoon the weather was fine.

## CHAPTER 32

### THE AORIST, IMPERFECT, AND PLUPERFECT

#### I. The Aorist (cf. p. 81)

THIS tense, rarely used in conversation, is formed from the infinitive stem by cutting off the infinitive ending -ти and adding the following personal endings :

Sing. 1st pers. —х	Pl. 1st pers. —мо
2nd —	2nd —сте
3rd —	3rd —ше

Verbs of Class I, 1, insert -o- between the root (ending in a consonant) and these endings, and in the 2nd and 3rd pers. sing. add -e ; the following forms are thus obtained :

I. трécox, трéce, трéce, трécocmo, трécocte, трécome = *shook* ; similarly ўзex = *took* ; пѡчex = *began* ; лѣrox = *lay down* ; звѡх = *called*.

II. мѣтнux, мѣтну, &c. = *put*.

III. чѣх, чѣ, &c. = *heard* ; писax, писа, &c. = *wrote* ; вѣровах, вѣрова, &c. = *believed*.

IV. прѣчах, прѣча, &c. = *told, related*.

V. ўчих, ўчи, &c. = *learnt* ; вѣдex, вѣде, &c. = *saw*.

A great many verbs of other classes follow the aorist-formation of Class I (often inserting a д), in addition to or to

the exclusion of their own forms, e.g. from *ѣмати*, aorist : *ѣмадох*, *ѣмаде*, &c., as well as *ѣмах* ; from *знѣти* = *to know*, aor. : *знѣх* and *знѣдох* ; from *ѡстати* = *to remain*, *ѡстах* and *ѡстадох* ; from *хтѣти* = *to wish*, *хтѣдох* and, rarely, *хтѣх* ; the aorist of *дѡнѣти* = *to bring* is in the 1st pers. sing. *дѡнѣх* or *дѡнѣсох*, but in the 3rd sing. only *дѡнесе* ; that of *дѡти* = *to give*, *дѡдох*, *дѡде* ; that of *ѣсти* = *to eat*, *ѣдох*, *ѣде*, &c.

Verbs of Class I with roots in *г*, *к*, *х*, change these in the 2nd and the 3rd pers. sing. of the aorist, e.g. *рѣѣти* = *to tell*, *то say*, *рѣкох*, *рѣче*, &c. From the verb *прѣнути* = *to burst*, root *прѣк-*, the aor. is *прѣкох*, *прѣште* (from *прѣк* + *е*, *прѣче*).

## II. The Imperfect (cf. p. 91)

This tense, still more rarely used in conversation, is formed by means of the following personal endings which are added sometimes to the present and sometimes to the infinitive stem :

	I.	II.	III.
Sing. 1.	-ѣх	-ѣх	-иѣх
2.	-ѣше	-ѣше	-иѣше
3.	-ѣше	-ѣше	-иѣше
Pl. 1.	-ѣсмо	-ѣсмо	-иѣсмо
2.	-ѣсте	-ѣсте	-иѣсте
3.	-ѣху	-ѣху	-иѣху

The following are examples of this tense in the various classes of verbs. (N.B. the final consonant or consonants of the root often change as the result of the -j.)

I. *трѣсиѣх*, *трѣсиѣше*, &c., *звѣх*, *звѣше*, &c.

II. *тѡнѣх*, *тѡнѣше*, &c. (from *тон* + *ѣх*), *мрѣжѣх*, &c. (from *мрѣн* + *ѣх*) = *was getting cold* ; *кѣшнѣх*, &c. (from *кѣшн* + *ѣх*) = *was getting wet*.

III. *чѣѣх*, *чѣѣше*, &c., *пѣсѣх*, *пѣсѣше*, &c.

IV. *прічāх, прічāше, &c. = was telling, relating.*

V. *ўчāх, ўчāше, &c., хвāļāх, хвāļāше, &c. (from хвāлити = to praise, хвал + јах), вйћāх, вйћāше, &c. (from вид + јах).*

### III. The Pluperfect

This tense is never used in conversation, and not often in writing. It is formed in two ways : (1) from the past tense of бѣти (cf. p. 59) and the past participle active of any verb, or (2) from the imperfect of бѣти (cf. p. 91) combined with the past participle active, e.g. *ймати* :

1. Sing. 1. *jā sam бѣо ймао or бѣо сам ймао.*

Pl. 2. *вй сте бѣли ймали or бѣли сте ймали.*

2. Sing. 1. (*jā*) *бѣјāх ймао (ймала f.).*

Pl. 2. (*вй*) *бѣјāсте (or бѣсте) ймали, &c.*

## CHAPTER 33

### CONJUNCTIONS AND INTERJECTIONS

#### I. Conjunctions

1. COPULATIVE : *й = and ; й—й = both—and ; кāко—тāко = both—and ; ā = (1) and, (2) but ; пā = (1) and (especially in the phrase на āнда = and than), (2) but ; тē = and (often used in consecutive sense = in such a way that, with the result that) ; нй = not even (requires another negative, e.g. нēmām ни пāре = I have not even a centime) ; нй—нй (or нйти—нйти) = neither—nor ; дā ли = whether (cf. p. 33).*

2. DISJUNCTIVE : *йли = or ; йли—йли (or more rarely, āли—āли, jā(ли)—jā(ли), вdл(а)—вdл(а)) = either—or ; бйло—бйло (or йли) = whether—or ; кōје—кōје = counting both—and ; чāс—чāс = at one time—at another.*

## 190 CONJUNCTIONS AND INTERJECTIONS

3. ADVERSATIVE: *à, àли, àма, нѣго* (or *нô*), *пàк* and *вѣх* all mean *but*, *à* and *àли* being the most usual, the other being stronger; *ипàк*=*however, nevertheless, after all*; *тà*=*well then*; *мà*=*even if only*; *мàкар*=*at least* (also = *although*).

4. CAUSAL: *јѣр* (seldom *јѣрбо*)=*because*, *пôшто*=*since*.

5. CONCLUSIVE: *дàкле*=*and so*; *ѣле*=*and thus*; *дàбòме*=*of course, I should say so*.

6. CONDITIONAL: *àко*=*if*; *кàд* (lit.=*when*)=*if*; *дà*=*if*.

7. CONCESSIVE: *прѣмда, мàда, иàко*=*although*; *мàкар*=*even though*.

8. TEMPORAL: *кàд*=*when*; *пôшто*=*after*; *откàко*=*ever since*; *прѣ нѣго*=*before*; *дòк*=*while*; *дòк не*=*until*.

9. FINAL: *нѣка*=*in order that*; *ѣда*=*if possibly*; *кàко би*=*in such way—that*.

Affirmation and negation are expressed by *јѣст* (or *јѣс*)=*yes*, really the 3rd pers. sing. of *бѣти*=*to be*; *дà* and *јà* are also used for *yes*; *нѣ*=*no*, also *нѣје* (lit.=*is not*); in general answers are frequently given by repeating part or the whole of the verb contained in the question, e.g. *јѣсте ли га вѣдели?*=*did you see him?* or *have you seen him?* *јѣсàм* or *вѣдео сам*=*yes, I have*; *јѣсте ли то чѣли?*=*did you hear that?* *нѣсам*=*no, I didn't*.

## II. Interjections

The commonest of these are: *здравò*=*hail! good-day!* *бòгами*=*indeed, in very truth*; *дàбòме*=*of course*; *јàо*=*oh, dear!* (expresses pain and sorrow); *тѣшко мѣни*=*goodness gracious me!* *Бòже мòј*=*my God!* *фàла* (or *хвàла*) *Бòгу!*=*thank God!* *зàбога*=*good heavens!* *кѣку* or *кѣку мѣни*=*alas!* (also *лѣле*); *ѣрà!*=*hurrah!* *јè л'те* (or *јèл'те*)?=*is it not so, n'est-ce pas?* *глѣ* or *глѣте*=*look!*

ѣво<sup>1</sup>=*here you are (he or it is), voici*; ѣто<sup>1</sup> and ѣно<sup>1</sup>=*there you are (he or it is), voilà*; е пѣ=*well? е! =fancy that!* ѣј!<sup>1</sup>=*hi, I say!* добро дѣшли=(you, pl., are) *welcome*; дѣде(р)=*well, go on then*; дѣла=*come (e.g. дѣла кажи ми=come, tell me)*; хѣјде(те)=*come here, also хѣјдемо=let us go*; бѣѣ=*flop!* ѣш=*be off!* мѣре (or бѣре) is a general word of address, supposed to be derived from the Greek Μώρος.

Common exclamations derived from verbs are: ѣди(те), ѣдлази(те) (N.B. this latter is much stronger)=*go away*; жури(те)=*hurry*<sup>2</sup> *up!* (попѣко, *adv.=go slow!*); слѣбодно,<sup>3</sup> ѣѣи(те)=*come in (sc. into the room)*; ѣѣтите=*be silent*<sup>4</sup>; стѣј(те)=*stop*; чѣкај(те)=*wait*; извѣни(те), or опрѣстите=*excuse me, I beg your pardon*; пѣзите=*take care, mind*; извѣл(и)те=*pray, be so good*. For greetings, passing the time of day, cf. p. 43.

### Vocabulary

свѣтитеѣ=*saint*  
гѣст=*guest*  
мѣнастѣр=*monastery*  
клима=*climate*  
мѣре=*sea*  
зѣмѣа=*earth, ground, country*  
капа=*cap*  
сабѣа=*sabre, sword*  
купа=*cup (of metal)*<sup>5</sup>  
ковчег=*ark*  
сѣре=*heart*

смѣт=*death*  
зѣповѣст=*order*  
рѣч=*word*  
слѣво=*letter of the alphabet*  
нѣчин=*manner, way*  
сѣседство=*neighbourhood*  
влѣст=*power*  
лѣубав=*love*  
блѣго=*treasure, blessedness*  
ѣправа=*government*  
Нѣје=*Noah*

<sup>1</sup> N.B. these all take the *acc.*, e.g. ѣво га=*there he (or it) is*.

<sup>2</sup> To *hurry* is жури(и), or жури(и) се, *ipfv.*, Class V, 1, also хѣтати, Class V, 2.

<sup>3</sup> N.B. слѣбодно also means *you may, it is allowed*; нѣје слѣбодно=*you mayn't*, besides having its literal meaning of *free, disengaged*.

<sup>4</sup> Also мѣр, тишина (= *quiet*).

<sup>5</sup> N.B. a *tea-cup* or *coffee-cup* is шѣа and шѣлица.

грабити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to grab*  
 продужити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to continue*  
 проговорити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to say, to begin, to speak*  
 управљати (*ipfv.*, IV) = *to govern*  
 променити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to change (trans.)*<sup>1</sup>  
 ударати (*ipfv.*, IV) = *to strike*  
 збвнути (*pfv.*, II) = *to call once*  
 пливати (*ipfv.*, IV) = *to swim*  
 растргнути (*pfv.*, II) = *to pull apart*  
 чист = *clean*

дијелити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to divide*<sup>2</sup>  
 разговарати се (*ipfv.*, IV) = *to converse*  
 удавати се (*ipfv.*, III, 2 a) = *to get married (of a girl)*  
 жєнити се (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to get married (of a man)*  
 састати се (*pfv.*, cf. pp. 106-7) = *to meet*  
 разбећи се (*pfv.*, cf. pp. 106-7) = *to run apart*  
 ѝскрен = *sincere*  
 сѝт = *satisfied*

### Reading Exercise

1. Плáтите му кòлико тра́жи пà ќе вaм рáдити. 2. Мòлим вaс ѝдите у Бeдгpaд тe свршитe сáми тáј пòсао. 3. Ни твòј брáт нè мoжe ѝћи. 4. Нà тy ствáр нèмaтe прáво ни вѝ ни òни. 5. Пòслe тòгa ни јà, ни òн, ни нєгoв брáт нe прoгoвòрисмo ни рèчи oтèби. 6. Òни су oдјèдном прoмèнили и зèмљу, и клíму, и сýсeдствo, и нáчин живòтa и нáчин ўпpaвe. 7. Нè трeбa ўпpaвљaти ни сàбљoм, ни пұшкoм, ни блáгoм ни влáшћу вèћ јèдíно ѝскрeнoм лұбaвлұ. 8. Їди тe гa зòвни. 9.<sup>3</sup> Їли гр́ми, ѝл' сe зèмљa трèсe, ѝл' ўдaрa мòрe у брèгoвe? Нѝти гр́ми, нѝт' сe зèмљa трèсe, нѝт' ўдaрa мòрe у брèгoвe, вèћ дѝјeлe блáгo свèтитeли. 10.<sup>3</sup> Ђли вòлиш пò мòру пливaти, ѡли вòлиш нa вáтри гòрeти, ѡли вòлиш дà тe рàстргнèмo? 11.<sup>3</sup> Дoнèси ми јèдну кұпу вíнa, јàли вíнa, јàли вòдe хлáднe. 12. Вòл' ти пѝти, вòл' ти кàпу кұпити. 13. Свѝ сe рàзбeгoшe, кòјe пò шуми, кòјe пò пoлy. 14. Дè-

<sup>1</sup> +се, *intrans.*

<sup>2</sup> In the *e*-dialect: дèлити.

<sup>3</sup> From national Serbian poetry.

дер, рѣци ми гдѣ си био ? 15. Хајде-те свѣ ђвѣмо. 16. Како му драго <sup>1</sup> тек <sup>2</sup> ми ђстасмо и без кола и без коња, те продужисмо пут пешке. 17. Тек што смо се састали кад он доби заповест да се крене даље. 18. Тек (ог бар) ви ми немђјте ђ томе говорити. 19. Јѣхашу, пијашу, жѣнаху се, удаваху се до ђнога дана кад Нђје ује у ковшег. 20. Гђсти су сѣдели, јѣли, пили и разговарали се. 21. СтѢро и младо, жѣна и дѣте, свѣ ти <sup>3</sup> тѢ ѣнглѣски гѢвори. 22. Бѣсмо ли код какве цркви или код манастира, не умѣм казати. 23. А како да га се не бђјмо ? Њѣга, кђји се није никога бђјао ! 24. Благо ђнима кђји су чѣстѢга срца ! 25. Граби и ти ђд срмти што гђд више мѢжеш (proverb).

### English Sentences

1. Wait a little, while I am buying cigarettes. 2. Do you know how to swim ? 3. That cap is too small for you. 4. What is that monastery on that hill ? 5. Our country is very beautiful, but the climate is bad. 6. The guests are all sitting in the garden and drinking coffee and eating jam. 7. My sister married a Frenchman. 8. Her brother married a Russian. 9. He could not find his things anywhere. 10. Suddenly it began to thunder and lighten. 11. We started at 9 o'clock this morning and returned at 10 o'clock in the evening. 12. Some one is knocking on the door. 13. Did you come on foot ?—No, we rode. 14. Excuse me, I did not know that you are here. 15. Bring me an egg, a piece of bread, some butter, some salt, and a cup of coffee. 16. I never eat meat ; have you no fish or vegetables or cheese ? 17. Let us go to the theatre this evening. 18. Goodness gracious me, it is already 11 o'clock. 19. I think that the weather will change. 20. Last night there was a strong frost.

<sup>1</sup> 'However that may be,' 'be that as it may.'

<sup>2</sup> Nevertheless, the upshot was that.

<sup>3</sup> Ethic dative, quoted from a letter of Dositheus Obradović, who visited England in the eighteenth century.

## CHAPTER 34

## THE PARTICIPLES AND THE PASSIVE

SERBIAN possesses four participles : the present and past indeclinable participles, and the active and passive declinable past participles.

**I. Present Indeclinable Participle.**

This is formed from the 3rd pers. pl. of the present tense by adding the ending -ћи :

I. трéсѹћи (from трéсти).

II. тóнѹћи (from тóнути).

III. пìјѹћи (from пìти), пìшѹћи (from пìсати).

IV. òмáјѹћи (from òмати).

V. ùчéћи (from ùчити).

This participle is only formed from *imperfective* verbs. It can only refer to the subject of the sentence and has adverbial use, e.g. óна је пéвала òдѹћи поред јéзера = *she was singing (while) walking along the lake*.

From бìти the form of this participle is бѹдѹћи ; as an adjective this word means *the coming*, as does also òдѹћи = *the following, the next*.

**II. Past Indeclinable Participle.**

This is formed from the inf. stem by adding to it -в, or more commonly -вши :

I. пòчéв(ши), ùзéв(ши), cf. p. 105.

II. мéтнѹв(ши), cf. p. 106.

III. чѹвши, пìсáвши.

IV. òмáвши, чítáвши, прìчáвши.

V. ùчìвши, вìдéвши.

This participle can be formed from verbs of either aspect.



Its use is similar to that of the pres. indecl. part., e.g. *мѣтнѹвши шѣшїр на главу он изаѣе из кѹхе* = *having put his hat on his head he went out of the house*.

The participle бѣвши, from бѣти = *to be*, is seldom used, but is common as an adjective meaning *the former, the late*.

From ѣти the form of this participle is ѣшавши<sup>1</sup>; also verbs of Class I with roots in a consonant insert -a-, e.g. трѣсавши, from трѣсти.

### III. The Active Declinable Past Participle.

The formation of this, and its use in forming the compound past tense, has already been described, cf. pp. 59, 148. This participle is often used impersonally in such sentences as *играло се, пѣвало и пило до пѣ(ла) нѣхи* = *dancing, singing, and drinking was kept up till midnight*; *у ѡвѣм земљотрѣсу прѡпало је много хѣљадѣ љѹди* = *many thousand people perished in that earthquake*.

### IV. The Passive Declinable Past Participle.

This is formed from inf. stem by adding the endings -т, -та, -то; -н, -на, -но, and -ен, -ена, -ено; the words thus formed are declined like indefinite adjectives.

The endings -т, -та, -то are taken by verbs of Class I with an inf. stem ending in -е, e.g. *пѣчѣт, пѣчѣта, пѣчѣто* = *begun*, from *пѣчѣти*, *ѹзѣт, &c.* = *taken*, from *ѹзѣти*, and by all verbs of Class II, e.g. *дѣгнѹт, &c.* = *lifted*, from *дѣгнути*.

The endings -н, -на, -но are taken by all verbs with an inf. stem in -а, e.g. *звѣн, &c.* = *called*, from *звѣти*, *брѣјѣн, &c.* = *shaved*, from *брѣјати*, *писан, &c.* = *written*, from *писати*, *чѣтѣн, &c.* = *read*, from *чѣтати* (Class IV), *дрѣжан, &c.* = *held*, from *дрѣжати*.

The endings -ен, -ена, -ено are taken by verbs of Class I

<sup>1</sup> And also, of course, from all its compounds.

with roots in a consonant, whereupon г, к, х become ж, ч, ш, e.g. плѣтен, &c. = *plaited, knitted*, from плѣсти, cf. p. 105, сѣчен, &c. = *cut*, from сѣћи ; root сек-, cf. p. 105, and by the verbs of Class V, the roots of which also undergo changes because of the combination of -и, the last letter of the stem with the ending -ен, e.g. хва́лен, &c. = *praised*, from хва́лити (хвали + ен), ви́жен, &c. = *seen* (from види + ен), вра́жен, &c. = *returned*, from вра́тити (врати + ен), пу́šten, &c. = *released*, from пу́стити (пусти + ен), у́чен, &c. (this is now considered an adjective = *learned*), from у́чити (учи + ен).

Verbs with stems in -у mostly take -ен, inserting -в- between the two, e.g. чѹвен, &c. (this also has become an adjective = *famous*), from чѹти (чу + ен), обѹвен, &c. = *shod*, from обѹти се, Class III, 1a = *to put one's boots on* (обу + ен).

Verbs with stems in -и vary, e.g. лѣти = *to pour*, вѣти = *to wind*, Class III, 1a, have лѣт, вѣт, but more commonly лѣжен and вѣжен, and even лѣвен ; бѣти = *to beat*, of the same class, has бѣжен, cf. убѣжен, from убѣити = *to kill*, and also, less usually, бѣвен ; пѣти = *to drink* has пѣжен, but N.B. *drunk* (= *intoxicated*) = пѣжѣн, but also напѣт чѡвек = *a drunken man*.

Verbs with roots in -р also vary, e.g. за́стрѣти (or за́стрѣти) = *to cover over* (with a carpet, table-cloth) has за́стрѣт, трѣти = *to rub* has трѣвен, e.g. утрѣвен цѣтъ = *well-trodden road, path*.

This participle is mostly used to take the place of the *passive*, which does not exist in Serbian as a separate voice.

The passive can be expressed either by the 3rd pers. pl. of the present, i.e. by a periphrasis, e.g. во́лѣ га = *they like him* = *he is liked*, from во́лѣти = *to like*, Class V, 2, or by this participle with бѣти = *to be*, e.g.

ја сам хваљен (or for *fem.* хваљена) or хваљен сам = *I am praised.*

ја сам био (*fem.* била) хваљен (*fem.* хваљена) or био сам хваљен (*fem.* била сам хваљена) = *I have been (or was) praised.*

ја ћу бити хваљен (*fem.* хваљена) or бићу хваљен (*fem.* хваљена) = *I shall be praised.*

буђи хваљен (*fem.* хваљена) }  
буђите хваљени (*fem.* хваљене) } = *be praised !*

(ја) бях хваљен (*fem.* хваљена) = *I was praised (aorist).*

ја бех хваљен (*fem.* хваљена) = *I used to be or was being praised (imperfect).*

буђући хваљен = *being praised.*

бивши хваљен = *having been praised.*

бити хваљен = *to be praised.*

This participle is frequently used impersonally in such sentences as : нађено је на улици стô (хѣладу, N.B. *acc.*) дѣнарѣ = 100 *dinars (frs.) were found in the street* ; ô томѣ је напѣсано мнôго (or пѣно) кѣѣгѣ = *many books have been written about that.*

### Vocabulary

Бôг = *God*

тѣлѣс = *wave*

сѣсрет = *meeting*

рѣзговор = *conversation*

жѣђ = *thirst*

тѣжан = *sorrowful*

чôвеков = *man's, human*

ѣгледати (*pfv.*, IV) = *to catch sight of*

путôвати (*ipfv.*, III, 3) = *to travel*

мѣо, мѣла = *nice, dear*

ѣмор = *fatigue*

количѣна = *quantity*

дôбро = *good (subst.)*

ôтаѣбина = *fatherland*

чôвечѣнство = *mankind*

прѣпливати (*ipfv.*, IV) = *to swim across*

ѣнемôћи (*pfv.*, I and II) = *to grow weak*

цѣнити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = to esteem<sup>1</sup>

ѡстарити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = to grow old

провѡдити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = to spend (of time)

заспати (*pfv.*, V, 3) = to fall asleep

спалити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = to burn up

срѣшити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = to pull down

учинити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = to do  
ражалити се (*pfv.*, V) = to take pity on

растѣжити се (*pfv.*, V, 1) =  
ражалити се

скйнути се (*pfv.*, II) = (1) to jump down from, (2) to take off one's clothes

изгѣбити се<sup>2</sup> (*pfv.*, V, 1) = to lose oneself, to disappear

мѡлити се (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = to pray (intrans.)

### Reading Exercise

1. Пѣтујѣћи тако дѡђе до јѣдне рѣке и идѣћи пѡред њѣ срѣте се с јѣдним чѡвеком кѡји је јѡхао на бѣлом кѡњу.  
2. Чѣјѣћи њихов рѣзговѡр ѡна изѡђе пред њих и рече им да ѣђу ѣ куђу. 3. Пѡшѡвши мѡло дѡље, (ѡн) дѡђе до јѣдног сѣла. 4. Тѡ рѣкѡвши, скѡчи у рѣку и прѣплива на дрѣгу ѡбалу. 5. Глѣдајѣћи је кѡлико пѡти, ѡн се ведма рѡжали (ог рѡстѣжи). 6. Ўгледѡвши га пред собом на пѣту ѡн се ѡдмах скйде<sup>3</sup> с кѡла и пѡђе му на сѣсрет. 7. Скѡчйвши у рѣку ѡн се изгуби у тѡлѡсима. 8. Ѧн је говѡрио ѡстарелој мѡјци. 9. Брѡт је мѡо кѡје<sup>4</sup> вѣре бйѡ. 10. Ѧн клѣче пред йкону мѡлећи се Бѡгу да му дѡ срѣће. 11. И не ймајѣћи њйкаквѡ пѡсла проводили смо дѡн у шѣтњи по брѣдима и долиѡнама. 12. Изнѣмогаѡ од жѣђи и ѣмора лѣже на трѡву и тврѡдо заспа. 13. Ѧн је тѣжно глѣдаѡ свѡје лѣпе кѣђе спѡљѣне и срѣшенѣ. 14. Чѡвеков жйвѡт нѣ цѣни се по великом брѡју гѡдйѡнѡ, вѣћ по количйни дѡбра ѣчињѣнѡг ѡтаѡбини и чѡвѣчѡнству.

<sup>1</sup> цѣна = price.

<sup>2</sup> изгѣбити ог загѣбити (*pfv.*) = to lose.

<sup>3</sup> Aorist of скйнути.

<sup>4</sup> Sc. ма кѡје.

## Vocabulary

двор = <i>court</i>	половина = <i>half</i>
народ = <i>people</i>	крв = <i>blood</i>
стража = <i>guard</i>	данак = <i>tribute</i>
динар = <i>dinar, franc</i>	данак у крви = <i>lit. tribute in blood</i>
осуђеник = <i>condemned man</i>	Турчин (pl. Турци) = <i>Turk</i>
крађа = <i>theft</i>	влажан = <i>damp</i>
вера = (1) <i>faith</i> , (2) <i>on parole</i> , also <i>on bail</i>	читав = <i>whole, entire</i>
суд = <i>judgement, court of justice</i>	праведан = <i>just, righteous</i>
	разнобојан = <i>of various colours</i>
оптужити (pfv., V, 1) = <i>to accuse</i>	поставити (pfv., V, 1) = <i>to place, to set</i>
поштовати (ipfv., III, 3) = <i>to esteem</i>	саградити (pfv., V, 1) = <i>to build</i>
окитити (pfv., V, 1) = <i>to adorn</i>	украсти (pfv., I, 1, root крад-) = <i>to steal</i>
разгледати (pfv., IV) = <i>to look at, to examine</i>	стати (pfv., cf. p. 106) = <i>to stand still</i>
урадити (pfv., V, 1) = <i>to do</i>	стало ми је до . . . = <i>I am anxious (e.g. to have)</i>
судити (ipfv., V, 1) = <i>to judge</i>	

## Reading Exercise

1. Он је оптужен за крађу. 2. Он је био поштован од свѣга народа. 3. Ливаде су окићене разнобојним цвећем. 4. Да разгледáмо шта је досад урађено на томе имању. 5. Суђено је да се умре. 6. Сви путови су му дтворени. 7. Али још није казано оно што је најлепше. 8. Прдшлого лета његова кућа није била саграђена. 9. Пред двором су постављене страже. 10. Сто је постављен за ручак. 11. Украдено му је сто динара. 12. Осуђеници ће бити пуштени (из затвора) на веру. 13. Питаће се на страшном суду ко је радио праведно а ко не! 14. Ако ти је стало до половине нашега имања даће ти се без речи. 15. За неколико стотина

гѡдина пѡд Тѹрцима у Србији се плаћао данак у крѡви.  
 16. Дѡбре књиге свѡдѡ се читају. 17. Путовало се по  
 читаѡ дан а ѡвече се спаѡвало на влажној зѡмљи. 18.  
 Цѡне га и хѡле на све стране.

## CHAPTER 35

THE ORDER OF WORDS AND THE FORMATION  
OF SUBORDINATE SENTENCES

THE order of words in Serbian in simple statements presents no difficulty, e.g. пишѡм писмо = *I am writing a letter*; стѡнујѡм код свѡга пријатеља = *I am living at my friend's* (for the present of бѡти and хтѡти, cf. pp. 31, 73). If the personal pronouns are retained, these precede the verb, e.g. ѡн чита нѡвине, а ѡна пије кѡѡу = *he is reading the newspaper, and she is drinking coffee*; ми сѡдѡмо, а ви стојѡте = *we are sitting, and you are standing*.

In negations the negative particle не immediately precedes the verb, e.g. (ја) не разѡмѡм ѡѡѡ рѡч or ѡѡѡ рѡч не разѡмѡм = *I don't understand this word*; if a negative pronoun is added this usually begins the sentence, e.g. нѡшта не разѡмѡм (or не разѡмѡм нѡшта) = *I understand nothing*; нѡкога нѡ видѡм = *I see no one*; нѡкад нѡ јѡшѡм = *I never ride*; не is not an enclitic, and therefore may begin the sentence.

The presents of the verbs бѡти, ѡмати, and хтѡти are compounded with не, viz. нѡсам, нѡмам, and нѡѡу, cf. pp. 34, 74, 111.

In questions various orders of the words are possible, e.g. (1, assumption) ви разѡмѡте ѡѡ or ви ѡѡ разѡмѡте? = *you understand this?* (2, with the interrogative particle ли, which must follow the verb, being an enclitic) разѡмѡте ли

(вѣ) ѿвѣ? = *do you understand this?* (if ли follows the personal pronoun it especially emphasizes it, e.g. ѿн ли тѣ рѣди? = *is it he who is doing this?*); (3, with дѣ ли = *whether*) дѣ ли (вѣ) разумѣте ѿвѣ? or дѣ ли (вѣ) ѿвѣ разумѣте? = *do you understand this?* (4, with зар, cf. p. 33); зар (вѣ) ѿвѣ разумѣте? = *do you really understand this?* (cf. also p. 33).

In questions beginning with an interrogative pronoun or adverb the personal pronoun, if retained, follows it immediately, e.g. штѣ (вѣ) рѣдите? = *what are you doing?* штѣ (ѿн) кѣже? = *what does he say?* гдѣ ѿн стѣнује? = *where is he staying?* с кѣме ѿна гѣвори? = *with whom is she talking?* In negative interrogations the order is: (вѣ) не разумѣте, не разумѣте ли (вѣ), or, most colloquially, зар (вѣ) не разумѣте? = *don't you understand?*

In simple sentences made with the compound tenses, i.e. the shortened parts of the auxiliary verbs бѣти and хтѣти, these latter, being enclitics, must *never* begin the sentence, e.g. дѣшли смо ор мѣ смо дѣшли = *we have come*; кѣзѣо је ор ѿн је кѣзѣо = *he (has) said (told)*; мѣслио сам ор јѣ сам мѣслио = *I thought*; дѣћи кемо ор мѣ кемо дѣћи = *we shall come*; кѣзѣу ор јѣ кѣ кѣзѣти = *I shall tell (say)*; мѣслиће ор ѿн ќе мѣслити = *he will think*; in general it may be said that the forms without the personal pronouns are far commoner.

When other words are added still greater variety is possible, e.g. (1) дѣшли смо јѣчѣ, or (2) мѣ смо дѣшли јѣчѣ, or (3) мѣ смо јѣчѣ дѣшли, or (4) јѣчѣ смо дѣшли = *we came yesterday*; (1) дѣћи кѣ сѣтра, or (2) јѣ кѣ дѣћи сѣтра, or (3) јѣ кѣ сѣтра дѣћи, or (4) сѣтра кѣ дѣћи = *I shall come to-morrow*.

When such sentences are negatived only *one* order is possible, e.g. (мѣ) нѣсмо дѣшли = *we didn't come*; (ѿн)

није казао = *he didn't say*; (jâ) нисам могао = *I couldn't*; (мѣ) нећемо доћи = *we shall not come*; (jâ) нећу казати = *I shall not say*; (ѡни) неће моћи = *they will not be able*; i.e. preceded by не- these words are no longer enclitics.

When such sentences are made interrogative the most usual forms are : да ли сте (вѣ) чули ? or, with the full form of the auxiliary, as сте and ли are both enclitics, јесте ли (вѣ) чули ? = *did you hear* ? but N.B. on no account чули ли сте (вѣ) ; negatived this would be да ли <sup>1</sup> нисте (вѣ) чули ? or нисте ли (вѣ) чули ? = *didn't you hear* ? — да ли су (ѡни) дошли or јесу ли (ѡни) дошли ? = *have they come* ? за̑р су (ѡни) дошли ? = *have they really come* ? да ли <sup>1</sup> нису (ѡни) дошли or нису ли (ѡни) дошли or зар нису (ѡни) дошли ? = *haven't they come* ? да ли је (ѡн) ѡтишао ? or је <sup>2</sup> ли (ѡн) ѡтишао ? = *has he gone away* ? да ли <sup>1</sup> није ѡтишао ? = *hasn't he left* ? да ли ћете (вѣ) доћи ? or хоћете ли (вѣ) доћи ? or вѣ ћете доћи ? = *will you come* ? нећете ли доћи ? = *won't you come* ? за̑р ћете (вѣ) доћи ? = *will you really come* ? зар (вѣ) нећете доћи ? = *won't you really come* ? But it is important to remember that the infinitive after хтѣти is very frequently resolved into a subordinate clause introduced by да, cf. p. 208.

When such interrogative sentences are introduced by an interrogative pronoun or adverb, the auxiliary immediately follows this latter, e.g. шта сте (вѣ) казали ? = *what did you say* ? (answer : ништа нисам казао or нисам казао ништа = *I said nothing*) ; кога сте (вѣ) питали ? = *whom did you ask* ? (answer : никога нисам питао or нисам питао никога = *I asked no one* ; њега сам питао or питао сам

<sup>1</sup> In such phrases ли may be and usually is omitted.

<sup>2</sup> је ли *can* introduce a sentence, though је by itself cannot ; this does not apply to the other persons.



њера = *I asked him*); гдѣ ћете станòвати? = *where shall you stay?* станòваћу у „Хòтел-Балкану“ = *I shall stay in the 'Balkan Hotel'*; кад ћете отпутовати? = *when will you depart?* кад сте дошли? = *when did you arrive?* гдѣ сте нашли òвò? or гдѣ сте òвò нашли? = *where did you find this?*

### Use of the reflexive Pronoun се

Examples of this have already been given, cf. pp. 114 ff. It may either precede or follow the verb, but, being an enclitic, cannot begin the sentence, e.g. бòђим се or јà се бòђим = *I am afraid*<sup>1</sup>; вàрàте се or вѝ се вàрàте = *you are mistaken*; нàдају се or òни се нàдају = *they hope*; negatived: не бòђим се or јà се не бòђим (*not* не се бòђим), не тýку се or òни се не тýку = *they are not fighting each other* (*not* не се тýку); put as a question: бојíte ли се? or вѝ се бојíte? or дà ли се бојíte? or зàр се (вѝ) бојíte? = *are you afraid?* as a negative question: нè варàте ли се? or вѝ се нè варàте? or дà ли<sup>2</sup> се (вѝ) нè варàте? or зàр се (вѝ) нè варàте? = *are you not mistaken?*

In questions beginning with an interrogative word the order is: чèра се (вѝ) бојíte? = *of what are you afraid?* чèму се (вѝ) смéјете? = *at what are you laughing?*

In the compound past tense се follows the enclitic auxiliary verb, e.g. прèварио сам се or јà сам се прèварио = *I made a mistake, I am wrong*; тýкли су се or òни су се тýкли = *they fought (each other)*; врати́ли смо се or мѝ смо се врати́ли = *we (have) returned*; in this tense it is very important to notice that the affirmative short form of the 3rd pers. sing. of бѝти is usually omitted, the combination се је or је се being avoided, e.g. вратио се or òн се вратио = *he (has)*

<sup>1</sup> N.B. This expression is not used so loosely as in English.

<sup>2</sup> ли may be omitted here.

*returned*; задѡцнила се ог ѡна се задѡцнила = *she is late* (lit. *has lated herself*).

In the negative compound past tense the order is either ѡни се нѣсу врѣтили or нѣсу се врѣтили = *they have not returned* or *did not return*; ја се нѣсам прѣварио or нѣсам се прѣварио = *I was not wrong*; in the 3rd pers. sing. the order is : нѣје се врѣтио or ѡн се нѣје врѣтио = *he has not returned*; нѣшта се нѣје дѣсило or нѣје се нѣшта дѣсило = *nothing has happened* (i.e. нѣје is retained, but је is omitted, cf. above and p. 203).

In the interrogative past tense the order is : ѡни су се врѣтили ? or дѣ ли су се (ѡни) врѣтили ? or јѣсу ли се (ѡни) врѣтили ? or зѣр су се (ѡни) врѣтили ? = *have they returned ?* (N.B. *not* врѣтили ли су се, cf. p. 202); in the 3rd pers. sing. : дѣ ли се (ѡн) врѣтио ? or зѣр се (ѡн) врѣтио ? or јѣ ли се (ѡн) врѣтио ? = *has he returned ?*

The negative interrogative past is usually in this order, viz. зѣр се (ѡни) нѣсу врѣтили ? (or нѣсу ли се (ѡни) врѣтили ? or ѡни се нѣсу врѣтили ?) = *have they not returned ?* зѣр се (ѡн) нѣје врѣтио ? or нѣје се (ѡн) врѣтио ? = *has he not returned ?*

In questions beginning with an interrogative word the order is : кѣд сте се (вѣ) врѣтили ? = *when did you return ?* чѣму су се (ѡни) смѣјѣли ? = *what were they laughing at ?* in the 3rd pers. sing. : штѣ се дѣсило (or догѡдило) ? = *what has happened ?* кѣд се (ѡн) врѣтио ? = *when did he return ?*

In the compound future tense се follows the enclitic auxiliary verb, e.g. ѡмићу се or ја ћу се ѡмити = *I am going to wash*; сѣд ћу се ѡмити = *now I am going to wash*; ѡдмах ће се (ѡн) врѣтити or врѣтиће се ѡдмах, or ѡн ће се врѣтити ѡдмах, or ѡн ће се ѡдмах врѣтити = *he will return directly*; put negatively : ѡн се нѣће врѣтити or нѣће се врѣтити = *he*

*will not return*; put interrogatively: да ли ће се (ћн) врати́ти? or хоће ли се (ћн) врати́ти? or он ће се врати́ти? or за́р ће се (ћн) врати́ти? = *will he return?* put negatively interrogatively: за́р се (ћн) неће врати́ти? = *won't he return?* with an interrogative word: ка́д ћете се врати́ти? = *when will you return?*

In such sentences also a subordinate clause beginning with да as often as not takes the place of the infinitive.

There is a peculiar tendency to place the verbal forms је and су after the first word of the sentence, especially between pronoun and noun, instead of between subject and predicate, e.g. на́ше је се́ло најве́ће у о́вome кра́ју = *our village is the biggest in this district*; ња́хови су ро́дитељи врло бо́гати = *their parents are very rich*, but this is considered bad style.

### Position of the enclitic Pronouns

The following examples show where these may be placed :  
 во́лим га or ја га во́лим = *I like (or love) him*; во́лим је or ја је во́лим = *I like (or love) her*; ви́ди ме or он ме ви́ди = *he sees me*; ви́дѐ те or њи те ви́де = *they see thee*.  
 не во́лим га or ја га не во́лим = *I don't like him*; не ви́дим је or ја је не ви́дим = *I don't see her*.  
 во́лите ли је? or ви је во́лите? or да ли је (ви) во́лите? = *do you like her?* по́знаје те ли га? or ви га по́знајете? or да ли га (ви) по́знајете? = *do you know him (personally)?*  
 не чу́јете ли га? or за́р га (ви) не чу́јете? = *don't you hear him?*  
 за́што га (ви) не во́лите? = *why don't you like him?*  
 чу́о сам га or ја сам га чу́о = *I (have) heard him*; ви́дели су ме or њи су ме ви́дели = *they saw (or have seen) me*.  
 ни́сам га чу́о or ја га ни́сам чу́о = *I did not hear (or have not*

heard him); нисмо је видели *or* ми је нисмо видели = *we did not see (or have not seen her)*.

јесте ли га (ви) видели ? *or* да ли сте га (ви) видели ? *or* ви сте га видели ? = *have you seen him ?*

нисте ли га нашли ? *or, better, за* га нисте нашли ? = *haven't you found him (or it) ?*

кад сте га видели ? = *when did you see him ?*

где сте је нашли ? = *where did you find her (or it) ?*

видећу га сутра *or* сутра ћу га видети *or* ја ћу га видети  
сутра = *I shall see him to-morrow*; наћи ћу је *or* ја ћу  
је наћи = *I shall find her (or it)*; ви ћете ме наћи =  
*you will find me*.

нећете га наћи *or* ви га нећете наћи = *you won't find him (or it)*; нећу га пустити *or* ја га нећу пустити = *I won't let him go*.

хoћете ли га (ви) видети сутра ? *or* да ли ћете га (ви) сутра  
видети ? = *shall you see him to-morrow ?*

за<sup>р</sup> је нећете пољубити ? = *are not you going to kiss her ?*

кад ћете га видети ? = *when shall you see him ?*

пише ми *or* он ми пише = *he writes (to) me*.

не пише ми *or* он ми не пише = *he doesn't write to me*.

пишете ли му ? *or* да ли му (ви) пишете ? *or* ви му  
пишете ? = *do you write (or are you writing) to him ?*

зашто ми не пишете ? = *why don't you write to me ?*

написао <sup>1</sup> сам му писмо *or* ја сам му написао писмо =  
*I have written him a letter*; (писао <sup>1</sup> сам му = *I have written him*).

нисам му написао писмо *or* ја му нисам написао писмо =  
*I haven't written him a letter* (нисам му писао = *I have not written him*).

<sup>1</sup> Remember : писати (*ipfv.*) = *to write (generally)*; написати (*pfv.*) писмо *or* карту = *to write a letter or a card*.

јесте ли му написали писмо ? or да ли сте му (вѣ) написали писмо ? = *have you written him a letter ?*

јесте ли му писали ? = *have you written him ?*

нисте ли му писали ? or за̄р му (вѣ) нисте писали ? = *have you not written to him ?*

ка̄д сте му (вѣ) писали ? = *when did you write to him ?*

писа̄ћу му or ја̄ ћу му писати = *I shall write to him.*

не̄ћу му писати or ја̄ му не̄ћу писати = *I shall not write to him.*

хо̄ћете ли му (вѣ) писати ? or да̄ ли ћете му (вѣ) писати ? = *are you going to write to him ?*

за̄р му (вѣ) не̄ћете писати ? = *are you not going to write to him ?*

ка̄д ћете му писати ? = *when are you going to write to him ?*

With reflexive verbs which take the *dative* the order is :  
 то̄ ми се (ве̄дма or мно̄го) до̄пада = *I like that (very much)* ;  
 то̄ ми се не до̄пада = *I don't like that* ; до̄пада ли вам се то̄ ?  
 or да̄ ли вам се то̄ до̄пада ? = *do you like that ?* ка̄ко вам се  
 то̄ до̄пада ? = *how do you like that ?* то̄ ми се до̄пало (from  
 до̄пасти) = *I liked that* (je omitted) ; то̄ ми се нӣје до̄пало =  
*I didn't like that* ; то̄ ми се мно̄го до̄пало = *I liked that very much* ;  
 то̄ ће вам се до̄пасти = *you will like that* ; то̄ вам се  
 не̄ће до̄пасти = *you won't like that.*

When there are two pronouns, that in the *dat.* precedes that in the *acc.*, e.g.

ша̄љѣм му га or ја̄ му га ша̄љѣм = *I am sending it him*  
 (i.e. any *masc.* or *neut.* thing).

да̄о сам му га or ја̄ сам му га да̄о = *I have given it him.*

јесте ли му га да̄ли ? or вѣ сте му га да̄ли ? or да̄ ли сте  
 му га да̄ли ? = *did you give it him ?*

If reference is made to a *fem.* thing, *je* is used, e.g. да̄о сам му *je*, but as this *je* is the same in form as *je* = *is* (from

бити), it must be replaced by the alternative form for *her*, viz. *ју*, in sentences which contain *је*=*is*, e.g. *did he give it you* (sc. *the book*, књига, *fem.*)? = да ли вам ју је дао? or, better, је ли вам дао књигу? or да ли вам је дао књигу?

Otherwise *је* is always preferred, e.g. *јесте ли је видели?* or *ви сте је видели?* = *did you see (or have you seen) her?*

### Note

The English idiom *shall I . . .* must be rendered as follows : да вам наспем<sup>1</sup> још једну шољу кафе? = *shall I pour you out another cup of coffee?* i.e. by the present of a perfective verb and да; да му дам ову књигу? = *shall I give him this book?* да одемо вече́рас у кинематогра́ф? = *shall we go to the cinematograph this evening?*

### Wishes

*Wishes* are expressed by the conjunction *нека* or *да* followed by the present or the conditional, e.g. да би Бог дао or нека да Бог! = *may God grant!* N.B. да = 3rd pers. sing. pres. of да́ти = *to give*, must not be confused with the conjunction да. Да жи́ви на́ш на́род! = *long live our nation!* The past participle active is also used in such expressions, e.g. жи́вео! = *long live!* (N.B. жи́вела! *fem.*).

### The Formation of Subordinate Sentences

#### ДА

1. After the verbs хте́ти, мо́ћи, мо́рати, тре́бати, има́ти (in the sense *to have to*) and certain others, the infinitive, which is usual in other languages, is not incorrect in Serbian, but its place is most frequently taken by a subordinate clause

<sup>1</sup> Pres. of на́сѣти, *pfv.*, Class I, 2, cf. p. 105.

introduced by *да* and the verb in the present; whether a perfective or imperfective present is used of course depends on the meaning.

Examples of such sentences have already been given on pp. 89, 117 f., 131, 134. A few more are added here: *хòђу да идём вечèрас у пòзорйште* = (1) *I shall go to the theatre this evening*, or (2) *I want to go to the theatre this evening*; *кàд ћете да дòђете?* = *when will you come?* *мòрàм да òдём* = *I must go*; *нè могу да вйдйм* = *I cannot see*; *штà ћемо да рàдимо?* = *what shall we do?*

In such sentences if the object of the second verb is *тò* (= *that*), this is frequently placed in the principal sentence, e.g. *нè могу тò да рàдйм* = *I cannot do that*; *хòђу тò да учинйм* = *I shall do that*; *мòрао сам тò да му кàжём* = *I had to tell him that*; but N.B. *мòрàм да га (or је) вйдйм* = *I must see him (or her)*.

2. *Да* is used to introduce the subordinate clause after all verbs of *declaring, believing, hearing, seeing, commanding, wishing, &c.*, e.g. *кàжём вам да сам бòлестан* = *I tell you that I am ill (masc.)*, *кàжу да је нèко дòшао* = *they say that some one has come*; *кàзао сам му дà је тò йстина* = *I told him that this was the truth*; *кàзали су ми да òна нйје кòд куће* = *they told me that she was not at home* (N.B. in Serbian in such clauses the present must always be used, the past would refer to the remote past); *мйслите ли да ће (òн) дòћи?* = *do you think (that) he will come?* *нàдàм се да ћете ми тò учинити* = *I hope (that) you will do this for me*; *вйдйм да не рàзумèре у чèму је ствàр* = *I see that you don't understand what the matter is about (lit. is in)*; *чýо сам да је (òна) врло бòлесна* = *I have heard (= I hear) (that) she is very ill*; *рèкао му сам да дòђе штò прè* = *I told him to come as soon as possible*; *хтèо сам да вам кàжём* = *I wanted to tell you*. In

all such sentences the conjunction is virtually essential, and must not be omitted, as frequently in English.

3. Followed by *ли*, *да*=*whether*, e.g. *нѣ знѣм да ли је она код куће*=*I don't know whether ('if') she is at home.* For the use of *да ли* in direct questions, cf. pp. 58, 70.

4. *Да* preceded by *као* expresses *comparison*, e.g. *уморан сам као да сам кола вукао*=*I am (as) tired as if I had pulled a carriage.*

5. *Да* is used to express a *result*, e.g. *ја сам толико (or толико сам) уморан да не могу ништа да радим*=*I am so tired that I can do nothing.*

6. *Да* is used to express a *purpose*, e.g. *дошли смо да разговарамо с вама*=*we have come (in order) to talk with you*; *писао сам му да дознам истину*=*I have written him in order to learn the truth*; when the subject of the clause is not the same as that of the principal sentence the conditional is used, e.g. *писао му сам да би он дознао истину*=*I have written him in order that he may learn the truth.*

*In order that* is sometimes rendered by *нека* as well as by *да*, e.g. *мет(н)ите моје ципеле крај ватре нека (or да) се суше*=*put my boots (or shoes) near the fire to get dry.*

7. *Да* is used to express an *unreal condition*, e.g. *да сам знао да сте болесни дошао бих раније да вас видим*=*if I had known that you are ('were') ill, I should have come to see you sooner*; *да сам могао ја бих то учинио*=*if I had been able I should have done this.*

8. As Serbian has no declinable (adjectival) present participles, and no construction such as the 'acc. and inf.', sentences such as 'I see him coming' are paraphrased with *да*, whereupon the object is put in the principal sentence, e.g. *видим га да (or N.B. где) долази*=*I see him coming*; *чујем је да (or N.B. где) пева*=*I hear her singing.*



## ШТО

9. After verbs of *feeling*, when any cause of the emotion is expressed, што is used to introduce the clause, e.g. радуюјем се што сте дошли = *I am very glad that you have come*; жào ми је што га нисам видео = *I am sorry that I did not see him*.

## ЈЕР—ЗАТО ШТО—ПОШТО

10. *Cause* is also expressed by јер or зато што and пошто, e.g. не могу да пишм јер (or зато што) нмām ни пера ни мастила = *I cannot write because I have neither pen nor ink*; волим га јер је (он) искрен = *I like him because he is sincere*; пошто нмām нòвца не могу путòвати = *since I have no money I cannot travel*.

## ПОШТО

11. Пошто also = *after*, e.g. тò се деси́ло пошто сте ви òтишли = *that happened after you went away*.

## ПРЕ НЕГО ШТО

12. *Before* is rendered by пре него што, or пре нòго, or пре но што, e.g. тò се деси́ло пре него што смо дошли = *that happened before we came*.

## ЧИМ

13. *As soon as* is rendered by чим (or чим), e.g. изаћи ћемо (крéнућемо се) чим прèстане (or стàне) кшпа = *we shall go out (we shall start) as soon as the rain stops*.

## ДОК (НЕ)

14. *While* = дòк, *until* = дòк не, e.g. док ви пишете писмо ја ћу пуштити = *while you are writing the letter I shall smoke*; чекаћу вас óвде док не дођете = *I shall wait (for) you here till you come*.

## КАД

15. The conjunction *кад*=(1) *when*, and (2) with the conditional, *if* in *eventual conditions*, e.g. (1) *јавите ми кад ћете да дођете*=*let me know when you are coming*,—*кад дођете* would=—*when you come*; *радоваћу се кад се сврши овај посао*=*I shall be glad when this work is finished*; (2) *ја бих то учинио кад бих могао*=*I should do this if I could*, but N.B. in unreal (past) or future (real) conditions *да* and *ако* must be used, cf. next paragraph, and p. 210.

## АКО

16. *If* is rendered by *ако* in past, present, or future *real conditions* and by *ако* with the conditional in future *eventual conditions*, e.g. *хајдемо(те) ако сте готови*=*let us go if you are ready*; *бићу вам врло захваљан ако ми то учините*=*I shall be very grateful to you if you do this for me*; *ако сте прочитали књигу вратите ми је*=*if you have read the book (through) return it to me*; *ако би он дошао јавите ми*=*if he should come, let me know*.

## ПРЕМДА—МАДА—ИАКО

17. *Although, even if* are rendered by the compound conjunctions *премда*, *мада*, and *иако* (or *и ако*), e.g. *он је дошао премда (or мада or иако) сам му рекла да остане код куће*=*he came (or has come) although I (fem.) told him to stop at home*.

18. *Relative clauses* are introduced by the relative pronoun *који*=*which*, or conjunctions such as *као што*=*as*, *како*=*how*, e.g. *човек који је дошао тражи вашег брата*=*the man who has come is looking for your brother*; *село које видите је наше*=*the village which you see is ours*; for the oblique cases of the masculine *ко* is used, e.g. *човек кога видите је мој брат*=*the man whom you see is my brother*.

## FORMATION OF SUBORDINATE SENTENCES 213

Frequently *што* is used for a general relative if the relative pronoun is in the *nom.* or *acc.*, e.g. *донео сам вам књигу штò* (for *кòју*) *сте тражили* = *I have brought you the book which you wanted* (lit. *sought*); *данао сам видео òну гòспођу штò* (for *кòја*) *је сйнòћ пèвала* = *I saw the lady to-day who sang at our house last night*; *каò штò сам вам кáзао . . .* = *as I told you . . .*; *нèје хтèо да ми кáже кáко је дòшао до тòга нòвца* = *he would not tell me how he came by that money*; *штò вèше то* (or *тèм* = *by so much*) *бòље* = *the more the better*; *у кòлико вèше учíte у толико вàше знáте* (or *у толико ћете вèше знáти*) = *the more you learn the more you (will) know*; *дòклè здрáвља ймáте дòтле сте и срèћни* = *to what extent you have health to that extent also you are happy* (fortunate); *кòлико јá знáм* = *as far as I know*; for as concerns cf. p. 120.

19. The expressions *тáмáн штò* and *тèк штò* followed by *кáд* = *barely . . . when . . .*, e.g. *тáмáн* (or *тèк*) *штò смо сèли да се òдморíмо кáд òни нам нарéдише да се крèнемо дáље* = *barely had we sat down to rest when they ordered us to go on farther*.

20. *Ўмáло* (*штò*) + a negative = *almost*, e.g. *ýмáло штò нíсам пáò ý воду* = *I very nearly fell into the water (little was wanting that)*; *ýмáло не забòравих да вам тò кáжем* = *I almost forgot to tell you that*; *зáмáло штò пòбеда нèје била нáша* = *the victory was almost ours*; *зáмáло пa да пòбеда бýде нáша* = *the victory is almost ours*.

As regards the order of words in a subordinate sentence the following points may be noted: (1) the short forms of the verb *бýти* follow *immediately* after the conjunction, e.g. *мýслим да је òвá кýћа њèгова својíна* = *I think (that) this house is his property*; *вèдýм да сте (ви) ýмòрни и нèзaдовòлни* = *I see that you are tired and displeased*; (2) other

verbs usually follow the conjunction as closely as possible, but separated by the personal pronoun, if this is retained, e.g. чѹо сам да (ви) пишете јѣдну књѣгу = *I have heard that you are writing a book*; знѣм да ђвѣј госпѡдин пише јѣдну књѣгу = *I know that this man is writing a book*; вѣдѣм шта (ви) рѣдите = *I see what you are doing*; нѣ знѣм шта рѣди ђвѣј ѣѣк = *I don't know what this schoolboy is doing*; нѣ знѣм кѡлико кѡшта ђва сликѣ = *I don't know how much this picture costs*; (3) in the compound past and future tenses the parts of the auxiliary verbs бѣти and хтѣти must follow immediately after the conjunction, the personal pronouns, if retained, coming next, e.g. ѡтишао сам кѡд сам чѹо да је ђѡлесна = *I went away when I heard that she was* (N.B. lit. *is*) *ill*; дѡшао сам чѣм сам чѹо да сте ђѡлесни = *I came as soon as I heard that you were ill*; чѹѣм да сте (ви) бѣли дѣнас кѡд ѣѣх = *I hear that you have been at their house to-day*; нѣсам знѣо да су ѡни бѣли дѣнас у вѣроши = *I did not know that they had been in the town to-day*; знѣм да је ѡна кѹпила нѡв шѣшѣр = *I know that she has bought a new hat*; мѣслѣм да ѣе (ѡн) дѡѣи = *I think that he will come*; мѣслѣм да ѣе дѣнас пѣдати кѣша = *I think it is going to rain to-day*; (4) the reflexive pronoun follows immediately after the conjunction in the present, e.g. нѣдам се да се (ви) дѡѡро ђѡмѣрате = *I hope that you are having a good rest*, but in the compound past and future tenses comes between the auxiliary and the verb (or the personal pronoun if retained), e.g. нѣ знѣм дѣ ли су се (ѡни) вѣтили = *I don't know whether they have returned*; мѣслѣм да сам се (ѣѣ) прѣварѣо = *I think I have made a mistake (am wrong)*; нѣ знѣмо кѡд ѣемо се (ми) вѣтити = *we do not know when we shall return* (or: кѡд ѣемо да се вѣтѣмо); мѣслѣм да ѣе вам се дѡпасти ђвѣ књѣга = *I think that you will like this book*; the 3rd person

singular *je* is always omitted in such sentences, e.g. *ми смо отишли пошто се то десило* = *we went away after that happened*.

## CHAPTER 36

## READING EXERCISE

## Vocabulary

сестрица = *sister*  
 господар = *master*  
 родитељ = *father*  
 мува or муха = *fly*  
 зрак = *ray*  
 пиће = *beverage*  
 љубичица = *violet*  
 марва = *cattle*  
 топ = *gun*  
 кућица = *small house*  
 огњиште = *fireplace*  
 наручје = *lap*  
 залогaj = *mouthful*  
 осећање = *sense, feeling*  
 слобода = *freedom*  
 милина = *love*

прџаја = *draught*  
 борба = *fighting, struggle*  
 заход = *setting* (of the sun)  
 бос = *barefooted*  
 детињаст = *childish*  
 очев = *father's*  
 жалостан = *pitiful*  
 скроман = *modest*  
 небески = *heavenly*  
 мудар = *wise*  
 свѣстан = *conscious*  
 националан = *national*  
 урођен = *born, native of*  
 крџав = *bloody*  
 последњи = *last*  
 сјлан = *strong*

твџрити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to carry out, to accomplish*  
 вадити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to take out*  
 праштати (*ipfv.*, IV) = *to forgive*  
 приличити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to suit, to become*  
 јечати (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to groan*  
 рџнити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to undermine, to erode*

засадити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to plant*  
 понашати се (*ipfv.*, IV) = *to behave*  
 прџпасти (*pfv.*, I and II) = *to perish*  
 улазити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to enter*  
 отрчати (*pfv.*, V, 3) = *to run off*  
 пробудити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to waken*  
 обасјати (*pfv.*, IV) = *to shine round*

затрѣптати ( <i>pfv.</i> , V, 3) = to <i>blink</i>	поседати ( <i>pfv.</i> , IV) = to sit in <i>turn</i>
понѣти ( <i>pfv.</i> , I, cf. p. 105) = to take with one	враћати се ( <i>ipfv.</i> , IV) = to return (cf. p. 120)
напáјати ( <i>ipfv.</i> , IV) = to <i>delight</i>	огрејати се ( <i>pfv.</i> , III, 2 a) = to <i>warm oneself</i>
смр̀кнути се ( <i>pfv.</i> , II) <sup>1</sup> = to <i>grow dark</i>	зада́вити се ( <i>pfv.</i> , V, 1) = to <i>choke</i>
сва́нути се ( <i>pfv.</i> , II) = to dawn	на́мучити се ( <i>pfv.</i> , V, 1) = to be <i>in pain</i>
наобла́чити се <sup>2</sup> ( <i>pfv.</i> , V, 1) = to cloud over	нау́чити се ( <i>pfv.</i> , V, 1) = to learn

1. Вода је најздравије пиће. 2. Синоћ сам била у врту  
берући љубичице све док се видело. 3. Кад смо стигле  
кући сунце је било на заходу. 4. Ви сте биле на мосту  
кад смо ми биле на брегу. 5. Лако је говорити али је  
тешко творити. 6. И жедан сам и гладан (сам). 7.  
Јесте ли много гладни?—Јесмо. 8. Ја једно пита́м  
а он дру́го одговара́. 9. Ја псе́то из буна́ра ва́дим а он  
ме у́једа́. 10. Смр̀кло се, а њих још нема. 11. Сва́нуло  
је ода́вно, а ми се још ни́смо крену́ле. 12. Не́бо се  
стра́шно наобла́чило, изгледа да ће па́дати ки́ша. 13.  
Ва́ља пра́штати и непријате́љу. 14. Не при́личи му да  
се пона́ша де́тињасто. 15. Топ за то́пм грми, јечи,  
сева. 16. Бог не да једноме човеку сва добра. 17.  
Тиха вода брег рони. 18. Лети као мува без главе.  
19. Мајке нема́м а сестрице нема́м. 20. Овуда су  
прошла три боса дѣтета. 21. Ватра и вода су добре  
слуге али зли господари. 22. Кроз отворену капију  
улази марва, враћајући се спдо́ла. 23. Око куће било  
је засађено силно<sup>3</sup> воће. 24. Да ти није мене било ти  
би пропао. 25. Мило ми је што сте дошли. 26. Не́бо

<sup>1</sup> The *ipfv.* of this verb is смр̀кавати се, Class IV.

<sup>2</sup> From облак = cloud.

<sup>3</sup> A lot of.

и море беху мирни када смо улазили у пристаниште. 27. У последњој борби погинуло је више од двеста војника. 28. Спрам наше куће преко потока живела су три брата у скромној кућици. 29. Обдјица отрчаше у шуму. 30. Њ по нџи нешто ме пробуди изненада. 31. Кад уђоше у кућу на огњишту није имало (ог било) ватре да се огреју. 32. Сви поседаше љнаоколо под један густ и широки храст. 33. Ништа није човеку жалосније него кад страда од својих пријатеља. 34. Најгори је залогaj којим се човек задави. 35. С тебе срећу изгубила нисам, ни са себе ни са своје старе мајке, ни са свога старог родитеља. 36. Ко се не намучи тај се не научи. 37. Идите у село што је пред вама. 38. Пред капијом су трџа кола. 39. Отворена су трџа врата; страшна је прџаја. 40. После очеве смрти њихова мајка остала је са шесторо деце. 41. Кажу нам да је дошао један (ог неки) човек, који вас тражи. 42. Једном стаде отац разговарати са својим синџима. 43. Тамо, где те је сунце зрацима први пут обасјало и звезде ти с небеског свода први пут затрепале; тамо, где те је мајка први пут од милине у наручју поднела, а отац ти мудрим речима срце напajaо:—тамо је твоја отаџбина! 44. У свима временима Срби су били и остали свесни својих националних права и слободе. 45. Вековима су трајале борбе за права и слободу Српског Народа. 46. Урођено осећање за право и слободу често је водило Србе у крваве борбе за права и слободу других. 47. Не<sup>1</sup> само<sup>1</sup> да нисмо могли, него<sup>1</sup> нисмо ни хтели да заборавимо своја права. 48. Моја врата су отворена не само вама него и сваком поштеном човеку. 49. Ви сте свесни својих права, али јесте ли свесни и својих дужности?

<sup>1</sup> не само . . . него . . . = *not only . . . but . . .*

## CHAPTER 37

## READING EXERCISE

## Vocabulary

крѧѣ = *king*  
 момче = *boy*  
 јѹнѧк = *hero*  
 сѹдија = *judge*  
 старѧц = *old man*  
 старѧтеѣ } = *tutor, guardian*  
 старѧлац }  
 лѧбѹд = *swan*  
 кѧњѣц = *steed*  
 брѧк = *moustache* (pl. брѧковѣ)  
 стрѹк = *waist, figure*<sup>1</sup>  
 рѹно = *fleece*  
 жѣто = *corn, cereals*  
 (п)шѣница = *wheat*  
 крѣло = *wing*; also *lap*  
 нѧтѣис = *inscription*  
 кѧмѣн = *stone*  
 бѣлег = *sign*  
 грѧб = *grave*  
 стѣна = *rock*  
 дѧла or дѧѣа = *valley*  
 врѣло or ѣзвѧр = *spring* (of  
                   water)  
 лѹка = *bay*  
 гѧра = *forest* (on a hill)  
 свѣт = (1) *world*, (2) *people*  
 ѣме = *name*  
 дѹх = *spirit*  
 скѧк = *jump*  
 рѧдѧст = *joy*

мѹка = *pain*  
 вѣрност = *loyalty*  
 прѣвод = *translation*  
 прѣвоѣѣне = *act of translating*  
 злѧ = *evil*  
 вруѣѣна = *heat*  
 стрѧх = *terror*  
 срамѧта = *shame*  
 прѧст = *simple*  
 спѧр = *slow*  
 дѧстижан = *who achieves his*  
                   *object*  
 сѧколов = *falcon's*  
 свѣтѣ = *holy*  
 тѧнак = *thin*  
 смѣѣ = *dark* (colour)  
 дугѹѣаст = *oval*  
 сѹв (or сѹх) = *dry*  
 пѧдугачак = *rather long*  
 кѹкаст = *curved*  
 нѧмрѧѣен = *frowning*  
 пѹн = *full*  
 вѣрен = *engaged* (to be married)  
 тѹѣ = *strange*  
 гѧ, гѧѣа = *naked*  
 дѣснѣ = *right hand*  
 ѧбѣлан = *plentiful*  
 свѧкоѣѣки = *of every kind*  
 Ѧмин = *Amen*  
 нѧздрѧвѣе = *to your health*

<sup>1</sup> N.B. стрѹка = *profession, trade*.



напунити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to fill*  
утрчати (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to run into*

спасити (*pfv.*, I, 1, root спас-) = *to save*

назити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to notice, to look out*

пресудити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to decide*

изнети (*pfv.*, I, *irr.*) = *to bring out*

научити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to learn*  
сметати (*ipfv.*, IV) = *to prevent*  
пробадати (*ipfv.*, IV) = *to pierce*  
опростити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to forgive*

засејати (*pfv.*, III, 2a) = *to sow*  
нагрејати се (*pfv.*, III, 2a) = *to warm oneself thoroughly*

веселити се (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to be merry*

1. Рѹка рѹку мѣје, а образ обадвије (proverb). 2. На грѹбу му стоји и сад белег, прѹст камен без ѣкаква натиписа. 3. Бог је спѹр, али дѹстижан. 4. Оно је двѹр краља Пѣтра. 5. Ово је кѹћа моје тетке. 6. Дај ми, Бѹже, дѹчи сѹколове и бијела крила лабудова. 7. Ћ име ѹца и сина и свѣтѹга дѹха! Амин! 8. Дѹђе момче црна дѹка на коњѹцу лака скѹка. 9. Њѣгов ѹтац је чѹвек добре рѹке. 10. Видео сам јѣдног старца беле косе и браде. 11. Он је био танка и висока стрѹка, смеђе косе и врло малих брковѹ, дугѹљастих сѹвих ѹбраја, ширѹких ѹста и пѹдугачка, мало кѹкаста нѹса. 12. Ћмам дѹста вина и ракије. 13. Ћђе намрѹгођен не рѣкавши рѣчи. 14. Јѣданѣстог ѹвгуста ѹдѹђе гѹдине напунѣћу тридесет гѹђѣна. 15. Она ѹтрча пѹна радѹсти и рѣче да је вѣрена. 16. Сѣдите да се сѹнца <sup>1</sup> нагрѣјѣмо. 17. Бог ће га спасти мѹке и смрѹти. 18. Ћво вам вашѣг брата. 19. Њисам, мајко, живѹта ми мога <sup>2</sup>! 20. Не ѹдри <sup>3</sup> га, тако ти Бѹга <sup>4</sup>! 21. Ћ превѹѹђѣћу сваке

<sup>1</sup> Gen. sing.

<sup>2</sup> 'I didn't (do it), mother, upon my life!' ми = *to me* is redundant in English. This is a common saying: живѹта ми alone = 'upon my word'.

<sup>3</sup> Imper. of ѹдарити = *to strike*.

<sup>4</sup> Lit. 'thus to thee of God' = *in God's name*.

књиге трѣба пазити на вѣрност прѣвода. 22. Има људи који би пристали то да урѣде. 23. Има нас свакојаких ! 24. Хајдемо суду да нам пресуди. 25. Изнесите ми нове хаљине. 26. Невоља сваџему човека научи. 27. Отворите му врата да уђе. 28. Мили Боже, помози свакоме, сваком брѣту и добру јунаку. 29. Којој овци рѣно смѣта, онде није ни овце ни рѣна (proverb). 30. Не верује ни својим рођеним очима. 31. Ко се туђем злу весели, неће се својој нади. 32. Нико сам себи не може бити судија. 33. Овај човек је старатељ ономе сирот(н)ом детету. 34. Нека ти је наздравље. 35. Благо мајци која га родила. 36. Чисту образу мало воде трѣба. 37. Врућина ми је. 38. Ја обиђох многе доле, многе реке, многа врела,—горе, луке, стене голе, многе дворе, многа села. 39. Нега није страх од смрти. 40. Срамота га (је) било да уђе. 41. Пробада ме с десне стране. 42. Мили Боже, на свему ти хвала. 43. Оче, опрости ми. 44. Ми пишемо руком и пером. 45. Он отиде земљом и свијетом. 46. Недељом идѣмо у цркву. 47. Ко је тебе поставио судијом над нама. 48. Будите задовољни оним што имате. 49. Она жива је засејана пшеницом. 50. Србија је обилна житом.

## CHAPTER 38

## READING EXERCISE

## Vocabulary

Дунав = *Danube*Сава = *Save*раџар = *farmer*звер = *beast*рана = *wound*<sup>1</sup>прѣја = *maize-bread*погача = *unleavened bread*паѣа = *coin* (a centime)дим = *smoke*врѣх = *top, summit*<sup>1</sup> N.B. (x)paна = *food*.

околина = *district, neighbour-hood*

римски = *Roman*

моћ = *might*

мноштво = *quantity*

незнање = *ignorance*

услов = *condition*

погвор = *contradiction*

шаља = *joke*

завист = *envy*

бодж = *battle*

несрећа = *misfortune*

мисао = *thought*

пркос = *spite*

луд = *foolish, silly, mad*

напустити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to leave*

осудити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to condemn*

познавати (*ipfv.*, III, 2 a) = *to know*

чувати (*ipfv.*, IV) = *to keep*

упропастити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to destroy*

гонити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to pursue*

погледати (*pfv.*, IV) = *to throw a glance*

спустити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to lower, to put down*

опрати (*pfv.*, I, 3) = *to wash*

попети се (*pfv.*, III, 1 b) = (1) *to climb*, (2) *to be importunate, to 'keep on about'*

држити се (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to keep company with*

постидети се (*pfv.*, V, 2) = *to be ashamed*

нагнути се (*pfv.*, cf. p. 105) = *to bend*

дати се (*pfv.*, *irr.*) = *to be plunged*

крити се (*ipfv.*, III, 1 a) = *to hide (intrans.)*

свадити се } (*pfv.*, V, 1) =  
завадити се } *to quarrel*

1. Наша кућа је у пољу. 2. Пред црквом стајаше мноштво света. 3. Гледajte<sup>1</sup> те се вратите пре ноћи. 4. Од јуче је једнако<sup>2</sup> у гробници. 5. Овај војник је умро од рана. 6. Јесте ли ово учинили намерно или из незнања? 7. По његовој заповести ви морате напустити ово место. 8. Ни под каквим условима не можете прећи границу. 9. Десет људи осуђено је на смрт. 10. Јесте ли икад шетали поред мора? 11. Ни риба без воде, ни звр без гдере. 12. Два човека јахала су на коњима поред његових кола. 13. Ако прођете поред

<sup>1</sup> 'Mind,' 'try to.'

<sup>2</sup> Continuously.

његове куће речите му да ћу доћи вечерас. 14. Пошели смо се на врх брѣга и разгледали смо дивну околину. 15. Попѣше ми се с тим наврх главе. 16. Моја кућа је иза онога брѣга. 17. Узмите хартију из те кутије. 18. Идите дуж овога пута па ћете наићи на једну кућу с десне стране. 19. Срби живе с обе стране Саве и Дунава. 20. После неколико дана она оде у госте својим родитељима. 21. Нисам знала да имате још сестара осим оне коју познајем. 22. Данашње српске земље биле су некада под римском управом. 23. Под овим каменом има ракова. 24. У ратара црне руке а бела <sup>1</sup> подгача (proverb). 25. Чувај беле паре за црне дане. 26. У млађег подговора нема. 27. Ја не могу упропастити себе због твоје луде главе. 28. Он га је ударио из шале. 29. Немојте никога гонити из зависти. 30. Све што чинимо, чинимо из љубави према ваљем народу. 31. Овај пут води кроз наше село. 32. Доћи ћемо кроз два, три дана. 33. Сиђите низ две стѣпенице. 34. Моја сѣба је при земљи. 35. Ви као да <sup>2</sup> нисте при себи кад то радите. 36. Они ће се вратити са мнош. 37. С ким си, онакв си. 38. Кажи ми с ким се дружиш па ћу ти рећи какав си. 39. Мој брат је погинуо у рату (боју) против Турака. 40. Она се постиде и погледа пред се. 41. Ако немате чапу наднесите се над извор па пијте. 42. Пред тобом је срећа и несрећа. 43. Све то спустите на земљу. 44. Дао се у мисли и ништа не чује шта му се говори. 45. У свакој кући има дима. 46. То није у његовој власти. 47. Ко се од људи крије боље да га није (proverb). 48. Вода опере све осим греха (proverb). 49. Свадили се врашци око туђе прѣје (proverb). 50. Не чините ништа уз пркос.

<sup>1</sup> Sc. nice.<sup>2</sup> As if.

## SUBJECT-INDEX

- Accents, 20 ff.
- Adjectives, 61 ff., 84 ff.
- Adverbs of manner, 182 ff.
- Adverbs of place, 180 f.
- Adverbs of quantity, 184.
- Adverbs of time, 179 f.
- Alphabet, 10 ff.
- Aorist, 81, 187 ff.
- Aspects of the verbs, 121 ff.
- Cases (use of the), 39 ff., 153 ff.
- Causal clauses, 211.
- Comparison, 84 ff.
- Concessive clauses, 212.
- Conditional, 81 ff., 178.
- Conditional clauses, 211, 212.
- Conjunctions, 189 f., 200-215.
- Consecutive clauses, 210.
- Date (the), 98.
- Days of the week, 98, 136 f.
- Definitive pronouns, 165.
- Degrees of comparison, 84, 87.
- Demonstrative pronouns, 55 f.
- Dialects, 22 ff.
- Enclitics, 21 f., 205-208.
- Final clauses, 210.
- Food, 43, 51, 52, cf. 141, 143, 144.
- Future, 73 ff., 169 f.
- Genitive after negative, 138.
- Gerunds, 194.
- Imperfect, 91, 188.
- Impersonal verbs, 114 ff.
- Indefinite adverbs, 170 ff.
- Indefinite pronouns, 170 ff.
- Interjections, 190 f.
- Interrogative pronouns, 76 ff.
- Marriage, 127, 157, 160.
- Meals, 143, 144.
- Money, 119, 121, 159.
- Months, 136 f.
- Nationalities, 57 f.
- Negations, 34, 113, 200-208.
- Numerals, 92 ff.
- Participles, 194 ff.
- Past (compound), 59 ff., 70, 148 ff.
- Personal pronouns, 54 f.
- Pluperfect, 71, 189.
- Possessive adjectives, 63 f.
- Possessive pronouns, 66 ff.
- Prepositional prefixes, 123 ff.
- Prepositions, 151 ff.
- Present, 31 ff., 101 ff.
- Price, 121, 159.
- Professions, 51 ff.
- Pronouns, 54, 66, 135, 165, 170, 205 ff.
- Questions, 32 ff., 113 f., 200-208.
- Reflexive pronouns, 55, 203 ff.
- Reflexive verbs, 114 ff.
- Relationships, 68 ff., 72.
- Relative clauses, 212, 213.
- Relative pronouns, 76 ff.
- Seasons, 166.
- Shopping, 51 ff.
- Subordinate sentences, 200 ff., 208 ff.
- Substantival suffixes, 38 f.
- Substantives, 36 ff.
- Temporal clauses, 211.
- Time of day, 98 f.
- Verbs, 101-135, 139-148.
- Weather, 116, 117.
- Wishes, 208.

PRINTED IN ENGLAND  
AT THE OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS

Call No. 491.82

SUB  
~~secs~~

Accession No.

9834

Title

Serbian Grammar.

Author

Subotic, Dragutin & Nevi-  
11 B-1 - - - H A

FOR INFORMATION

FOR CONSULTATION  
ONLY